Serfojee Rajah. 1827
1215

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

EREGRINE PICKLE.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. III.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, et veras hinc ducere voces. Hor.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row;
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Town and Country.

MAHARAJA SERFOGI'S SARASW...

TO LORD ———

1215

MY LORD,

THE turn which your lordſhip gave to the converſation of laſt night, having laid me under the neceſſity of vindicating the ſtep I have lately taken in publiſhing Memoirs of my Life, I think I have a right to demand your opinion of the motives which I then explained; and this I aſk by way of appeal to your judgment from the ſentiments of thoſe who might perhaps think my inducements were weak or frivolous. For, though no perſon in the company attempted to invalidate the arguments I advanced, I could perceive that one gentleman was not altogether convinced of the rectitude of that meaſure: you may remember he dropped ſeveral diſſenting hints, couched in the modeſt expreſſions of, "With ſubmiſſion to your ladyſhip's better judgment.—But, to be ſure, you would not have taken ſuch a ſtep without firſt weighing the conſequences.—Your provocations were certainly very great, although the world is apt to put the worſt conſtructions upon every thing.'—And other ſuch prudential inſinuations, that are often more diſconcerting than the diſplayed objections of a declared antagoniſt; becauſe they ſeem to import ſomething of great weight, which perſonal reſpect endeavours to ſuppreſs. Theſe ſententious fragments made ſuch impreſſion upon my mind, that I have been all night long taſking my recollection, in order to diſcover the weak ſide of my defence; but, as one always ſees through the miſt of partiality in one's own concerns, I muſt have recourſe to your diſcernment, and ſeriouſly inſiſt upon knowing how far you approve the juſtification of, my lord, your lordſhip's moſt obedient ſervant,

* * * *

ANSWER.

MADAM,

I CANNOT help obſerving, that the ſerious manner in which you aſk my opinion of the motives which induced you to publiſh your Memoirs, is exactly of a piece with the conduct of thoſe who conſult their friends, for approbation rather than advice, and by a diſappointment in their expectations of applauſe, are more than ever wedded to their own inventions. How would your ladyſhip look, ſhould I now, in conſequence of your demand, aſſume the air of a ſevere moralizer, and tell you, that the ſtep you have taken, was altogether precipitate and inexcuſable; that you have unneceſſa-

rily avowed your own indiſcretion, incurred the reſentment of individuals, and attracted the reproaches of a cenſorious world; and that, over and above theſe diſadvantages, you have ſubjected yourſelf for ever to a life of domeſtick diſquiet, by incenſing the tyrant of whom you complain, beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs or reconciliation? Would not all the reſentment of a diſappointed author take poſſeſſion of your ladyſhip; overcaſt that chearfulneſs of countenance with a ſullen frown, and lighten from thoſe fair eyes in gleams of diſpleaſure? No, you would be more ſurprized than offended at my obſervations. You would believe you had been all along deceived in your opinion of my delicacy and underſtanding: you would be mortified at the diſcovery of your own miſtake, and look upon me with compaſſion, as one of thoſe tame, timid rationaliſts, who being naturally phlegmatick and fearful, are utter ſtrangers to the refined ſenſations of the human heart, incapable of doing juſtice to thoſe melting tenderneſſes which they never felt, and too irreſolute to withſtand the torrent of ignorant, malicious, or wrong-headed clamour, when it affects a character in which their friendſhip ought to be intereſted. Your ſentiments, I own, would in that caſe be juſt, excepting that I ſhould engage your ladyſhip's pity, in deſerving your contempt, and inſtead of being deſpiſed as a cold friend, be ſtill regarded by you, as a weak and timorous well-wiſher. If your character ſuffered cruelly from miſrepreſentations; if your foibles were magnified and multiplied with all the aggravation of envy and fiction; if the qualities of your heart were decried or traduced, and even your underſtanding called in queſtion; I agree with your ladyſhip, that it was not only excuſeable, but highly neceſſary, to publiſh a detail of your conduct, which would acquit you of all or moſt of thoſe ſcandalous imputations. This taſk you have (in my opinion) performed, to the ſatisfaction of all the intelligent and unprejudiced part of mankind. He muſt be very deficient in candour and feeling, who, in reading your Memoirs, is not intereſted in your favour; who does not eſpouſe the cauſe of beauty, innocence, and love; who does not ſee that as you once were, you would ſtill have continued to be the pattern of conjugal faith and felicity; had not the croſs accidents of fortune forced you from the natural bias of your diſpoſition: who does not excuſe the tenderneſs, which youth and ſenſibility, ſo circumſtanced, could not poſſibly reſiſt; and who

who does not freely forgive the fault, when he confiders the particulars of the temptation. He muft be void of all tafte and reflection, who does not admire your fpirit, elegance, and fenfe; and dead to all the finer movements of the foul, if he is not agitated, thrilled, and tranfported, with the pathetick circumftances of your ftory. Some people, who are your ladyfhip's friends, and highly entertained with the performance, have wifhed you had fpared yourfelf fome unneceffary confeffions, which they thought could ferve no end, but that of affording a handle to your enemies for cenfure and defamation: I myfelf, I own, was of the fame opinion, until you convinced me, that in fuppreffing one circumftance which might be afterwards difcovered, your fincerity through the whole piece would have been called in queftion. And what have you avowed, that your moft malicious foes dare blame, except your difregard of an unnatural contract, which (though authorized by the laws of your country) was impofed upon your neceffity, youth, and inexperience? Nor was this conduct the refult of vicious levity and intemperance: you had already given undeniable proofs of your conftancy and conjugal virtue, to the firft lord of your affections, who was the choice of your love, and to whom your heart was unalterably wedded. Your natural fenfibility had been, by his extraordinary care, tendernefs, and attention, cherifhed and improved to fuch a degree of delicacy, as could not poffibly relifh the attachment of the common run of hufbands. No wonder, then, that you was uneafy under a fecond engagement fo much unlike the firft; that every circumftance of the contraft appeared to you in the moft aggravating light, and made a fuitable impreffion upon your imagination; and that you was not infenfible to thofe attractions which had formerly captivated your heart, nor able to refift the flattering infinuations, incredible affiduity, and furprizing perfeverance, of an artful lover. And fure he could not have chofen a more favourable opportunity to prefer his addreffes: your paffions were unufually intendered by grief; you was diffatisfied with your domeftick fituation; you was folitary for want of that intimate connection in which you had been fo happy before, and your breaft glowed with the moft pathetick fufceptibility, while you was yet a ftranger to the infidious wiles of man. In fuch diftrefs the mind longs for fympathy and confolation; it feeks to repofe itfelf upon the tender

friendſhip of ſome kind partner, that will ſhare and alleviate its ſorrows. Such a comforter appeared in the accompliſhed youth: your judgment was pleaſed with his qualifications; his demeanor acquired your eſteem; your friendſhip was engaged by his ſincerity; and your affection was inſenſibly ſubdued. In ſhort, every thing conſpired to promote his ſuit, and my wonder is not that he ſucceeded, but that you held out ſo long. Your ſentiments with regard to thoſe who have inveighed againſt your performance, are altogether conformable to that good-ſenſe and benevolent diſpoſition, which I have always admired and eſteemed. As for writers who have exerciſed their pens in abuſing your ladyſhip, they are either objects of mirth or compaſſion. They, poor harmleſs creatures, in their hearts, wiſh you no evil. Their buſineſs is to eat, honeſtly if they can—but, at any rate, to eat. I am fully perſuaded, that for a very ſmall ſum you might engage the whole tribe to refute their own revilings, and bellow with all their might in your praiſe. It would really be uncharitable as well as abſurd, to expreſs the leaſt reſentment againſt ſuch feeble antagoniſts, who are literally the beings of a ſummer-day; they are the noiſy inſects, which the ſun of merit never fails to produce; the ſhadows that continually accompany ſucceſs; and, indeed, a man might as well fight with his own ſhadow, as attempt to chaſtiſe ſuch unſubſtantial phantoms. But of all the emotions of your heart, that which I am at preſent tempted to applaud, is the ſorrow you expreſs for having been obliged, in your own juſtification, to vilify and expoſe the man to whom your fate is inſeparably connected; and the laudable reſolution you have taken to live amicably with him for the future, provided he ſhall perſiſt in that conduct, which he hath of late choſen to maintain. On the whole, though you may have inflamed the virulence of envy and malice, rouzed the reſentment of ſome whoſe folly and ingratitude you had occaſion to diſplay, and incurred the cenſure of thoſe who think it their duty to exclaim againſt the leaſt infringement of the nuptial tie, howſoever unequally impoſed; your Memoirs will always be peruſed with pleaſure by all readers of taſte and diſcernment, and your fame as a beauty and author, long ſurvive the ill offices of prejudice and perſonal animoſity. And now that I have performed the taſk enjoined, give me leave to add, that I have the honour to be, Madam, your moſt devoted humble ſervant,

* * * *

THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE.

CHAP. I.

Peregrine arrives at the Garrison, where he receives the last Admonitions of Commodore Trunnion, who next Day resigns his Breath, and is buried according to his own Directions. Some Gentlemen in the Country make a fruitless Attempt to accommodate Matters betwixt Mr. Gamaliel Pickle and his eldest Son.

ABOUT four o'clock in the morning our hero arrived at the garrison, where he found his generous uncle in extremity, supported in bed by Julia on one side, and Lieutenant Hatchway on the other, while Mr. Jolter administered spiritual consolation to his soul, and between whiles comforted Mrs. Trunnion, who, with her maid, sat by the fire, weeping with great decorum; the physician having just taken his last fee, and retired, after pronouncing the fatal prognostick, in which he anxiously wished he might not be mistaken.

Though the commodore's speech was interrupted by a violent hiccup, he still retained the use of his senses; and when Peregrine approached, stretched out his hand with manifest signs of satisfaction. The young gentleman, whose heart overflowed with gratitude and affection, could not behold such a spectacle unmoved. He endeavoured to conceal his tenderness, which, in the wildness of his youth, and in the pride of his disposition, he considered as a derogation from his man-

hood;

hood; but, in ſpite of all his endeavours, the tears guſhed from his eyes, while he kiſſed the old man's hand; and he was ſo utterly diſconcerted by his grief, that when he attempted to ſpeak, his tongue denied its office: ſo that the commodore, perceiving his diſorder, made a laſt effort of ſtrength, and conſoled him in theſe words. 'Swab the ſpray from your bowſprit, my good lad, and call up your ſpirits. You muſt not let the top-lifts of your heart give way, becauſe you ſee me ready to go down at theſe years; many a better man has foundered before he has made half my way; thof I truſt, by the mercy of God, I ſhall be ſure in port in a very few glaſſes, and faſt moored in a moſt bleſſed riding: for my good friend Jolter has overhauled the journal of my ſins; and by the obſervation he hath taken of the ſtate of my ſoul, I hope I ſhall happily conclude my voyage, and be brought up in the latitude of heaven. Here has been a doctor that wanted to ſtow me chock-full of phyſick; but when a man's hour is come, what ſignifies his taking his departure with a 'pothecary's ſhop in his hold? Theſe fellows come along-ſide of dying men, like the meſſengers of the admiralty with ſailing orders: but I told him as how I could ſlip my cable without his direction or aſſiſtance, and ſo he hauled off in dudgeon. This curſed hiccup makes ſuch a rippling in the current of my ſpeech, that mayhap you don't underſtand what I ſay. Now, while the ſucker of my wind-pump will go, I would willingly mention a few things, which I hope you will ſet down in the log-book of your remembrance, when I am ſtiff, d'ye ſee. There's your aunt ſitting whimpering by the fire; I deſire you will keep her tight, warm, and eaſy in her old age: ſhe's an honeſt heart in her own way; and thof ſhe goes a little crank and humourſome, by being often over-ſtowed with Nantz and religion, ſhe hath been a faithful ſhipmate to me, and I dare ſay never turned in with another man, ſince we firſt embarked in the ſame bottom.— Jack Hatchway, you know the trim of her as well as

e'er a man in England, and I believe ſhe has a kindneſs for you; whereby, if you two will grapple in the way of matrimony, when I am gone, I do ſuppoſe that my godſon, for love of me, will allow you to live in the garriſon all the days of your life.'

Peregrine aſſured him, he would with pleaſure comply with any requeſt he ſhould make, in behalf of two perſons whom he eſteemed ſo much. The lieutenant, with a waggiſh ſneer, which even the gravity of the ſituation could not prevent, thanked them both for their good-will, telling the commodore, he was obliged to him for his friendſhip, in ſeeking to promote him to the command of a veſſel which he himſelf had wore out in the ſervice: that notwithſtanding, he ſhould be content to take charge of her, though he could not help being ſhy of coming after ſuch an able navigator.

Trunnion, exhauſted as he was, ſmiled at this ſally; and, after ſome pauſe, reſumed his admonitions in this manner. 'I need not talk of Pipes, becauſe I know you'll do for him, without my recommendation; the fellow has ſailed with me in many a hard gale, and I'll warrant him as ſtout a ſeaman as ever ſet face to the weather: but I hope you will take care of the reſt of my crew, and not diſrate them after I am dead, in favour of new followers. As for that young woman, Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I'm informed as how ſhe is an excellent wench, and has a reſpect for you; whereby, if you run her on board in an unlawful way, I leave my curſe upon you, and truſt you will never proſper in the voyage of life; but, I believe you are more of an honeſt man, than to behave ſo much like a pirate. I beg of all love, you wool take care of your conſtitution, and beware of running foul of harlots, who are no better than ſo many mermaids, that ſit upon the rocks at ſea, and hang out a fair face for the deſtruction of paſſengers; thof I muſt ſay, for my own part, I never met with any of thoſe ſweet ſingers, and yet I have gone to ſea for the ſpace of thirty years. But howſomever, ſteer your courſe clear of all ſuch brimſtone

bitches.

bitches. Shun going to law as you would ſhun the devil, and look upon all attornies as devouring ſharks, or ravenous fiſh of prey. As ſoon as the breath is out of my body, let minute guns be fired, till I am ſafe under ground. I would alſo be buried in the red jacket I had on when I boarded and took the *Renummy*. Let my piſtols, cutlaſs, and pocket-compaſs, be laid in the coffin along with me. Let me be carried to the grave by my own men, rigged in the black caps and white ſhirts which my barge's crew were wont to wear; and they muſt keep a good look out, that none of your pilfering raſcallions may come and heave me up again, for the lucre of what they can get, until the carcaſe is belayed by a tomb-ſtone. As for the motto, or what you call it, I leave that to you and Mr. Jolter, who are ſcholars; but I do deſire, that it may not be engraved in the Greek or Latin lingos, and much leſs in the French, which I abominate, but in plain Engliſh, that when the angel comes to pipe *all hands*, at the great day, he may know that I am a Britiſh man, and ſpeak to me in my mother tongue. And now I have no more to ſay, but God in heaven have mercy upon my ſoul, and ſend you all fair weather, whereſoever you are bound!' So ſaying, he regarded every individual around him with a look of complacency, and cloſing his eye, compoſed himſelf to reſt, while the whole audience (Pipes himſelf not excepted) were melted with ſorrow; and Mrs. Trunnion conſented to quit the room, that ſhe might not be expoſed to the unſpeakable anguiſh of ſeeing him expire.

His laſt moments, however, were not ſo near as they imagined; he began to doſe, and enjoyed ſmall intervals of eaſe till next day in the afternoon; during which remiſſions, he was heard to pour forth many pious ejaculations; expreſſing his hope, that, for all the heavy cargo of his ſins, he ſhould be able to ſurmount the puttock ſhrouds of deſpair, and get aloft to the croſs-trees of God's good favour. At laſt, his voice ſunk ſo low, as not to be diſtinguiſhed; and having

laid

laid about an hour, almoſt without any perceptible ſigns of life, he gave up the ghoſt, with a groan which announced his deceaſe.

Julia was no ſooner certified of this melancholy event, than ſhe ran to her aunt's chamber, weeping aloud; and immediately a very decent concert was performed by the good widow and her attendants. Peregrine and Hatchway retired till the corpſe ſhould be laid out; and Pipes having ſurveyed the body, with a face of rueful attention, 'Well fare thy ſoul, old Hawſer Trunnion!' ſaid he: 'man and boy I have known thee theſe five and thirty years; and ſure a truer heart never broke biſcuit. Many a hard gale haſt thou weathered; but now thy ſpells are all over, and thy hull fairly laid up. A better commander I'd never deſire to ſerve; and who knows but I may help to ſet up thy ſtanding rigging in another world!'

All the ſervants of the houſe were affected with the loſs of their old maſter; and the poor people in the neighbourhood aſſembled at the gate, and by repeated howlings, expreſſed their ſorrow for the death of their charitable benefactor. Peregrine, though he felt every thing which love and gratitude could inſpire on this occaſion, was not ſo much overwhelmed with affliction, as to be incapable of taking the management of the family into his own hands. He gave directions about the funeral with great diſcretion, after having paid the compliments of condolence to his aunt, whom he conſoled with the aſſurance of his inviolable eſteem and affection. He ordered a ſuit of mourning to be made for every perſon in the garriſon, and inviting all the neighbouring gentlemen to the burial, not even excepting his father and brother Gam, who did not, however, honour the ceremony with their preſence; nor was his mother humane enough to viſit her ſiſter-in-law in her diſtreſs.

In the method of interment, the commodore's injunctions were obeyed to a tittle; and at the ſame time our hero made a donation of fifty pounds to the poor

of the parish, as a benefaction which his uncle had forgot to bequeath.

Having performed these obsequies with the most pious punctuality, he examined the will, to which there was no addition since it had been first executed; adjusted the payment of all the legacies; and being sole executor, took an account of the estate to which he had succeeded, and which, after all deductions, amounted to thirty thousand pounds. The possession of such a fortune, of which he was absolute master, did not at all contribute to the humiliation of his spirit, but inspired him with new ideas of grandeur and magnificence, and elevated his hope to the highest pinnacle of expectation.

His domestick affairs being settled, he was visited by almost all the gentlemen of the country, who came to pay their compliments of congratulation, on his accession to the estate; and some of them offered their good offices towards a reconciliation betwixt his father and him, induced by the general detestation which was entertained for his brother Gam, who was by this time looked upon by his neighbours as a prodigy of insolence and malice. Our young squire thanked them for their kind proposal, which he accepted; and old Gamaliel, at their intreaties, seemed very well disposed to an accommodation: but, as he would not venture to declare himself, before he had consulted his wife, his favourable disposition was rendered altogether ineffectual, by the instigations of that implacable woman; and our hero resigned all expectation of being reunited to his father's house. His brother, as usual, took all opportunities of injuring his character, by false aspersions and stories misrepresented, in order to prejudice his reputation: nor was his sister Julia suffered to enjoy her good fortune in peace. Had he undergone such persecution from an alien to his blood, the world would have heard of his revenge; but, notwithstanding his indignation, he was too much tinctured by the prejudices of consanguinity, to lift his arm in judgment against the son of his own parents;

and

and this consideration abridged the term of his residence at the garrison, where he had proposed to stay for some months.

CHAP. II.

The young Gentleman having settled his domestick Affairs, arrives in London, and sets up a gay Equipage. He meets with Emilia, and is introduced to her Uncle.

HIS aunt, at the earnest solicitations of Julia and her husband, took up her quarters at the house of that affectionate kinswoman, who made it her chief study to comfort and cherish the disconsolate widow; and Jolter, in expectation of the living, which was not yet vacant, remained in garrison, in quality of land-steward upon our hero's country estate. As for the lieutenant, our young gentleman communed with him in a serious manner, about the commodore's proposal of taking Mrs. Trunnion to wife; and Jack, being quite tired of the solitary situation of a batchelor, which nothing but the company of his old commander could have enabled him to support so long, far from discovering aversion to the match, observed with an arch smile, that it was not the first time he had commanded a vessel in the absence of Captain Trunnion; and therefore, if the widow was willing, he would chearfully stand by her helm; and, as he hoped the duty would not be of long continuance, do his endeavour to the steer her safe into port, where the commodore might come on board, and take charge of her again.

In consequence of this declaration, it was determined that Mr. Hatchway should make his addresses to Mrs. Trunnion, as soon as decency would permit her to receive them; and Mr. Clover and his wife promised to exert their influence in his behalf. Meanwhile, Jack was desired to live at the castle as usual, and assured, that it should be put wholly in his possession, as soon as he should be able to accomplish this matrimonial scheme.

When Peregrine had settled all these points to his own satisfaction, he took leave of all his friends, and

repairing to the great city, purchaſed a new chariot and horſes, put Pipes and another lacquey into rich liveries, took elegant lodgings in Pall Mall, and made a moſt remarkable appearance among the people of faſhion. It was owing to this equipage, and the gaiety of his perſonal deportment, that common fame, which is always a common liar, repreſented him as a young gentleman who had juſt ſucceeded to an eſtate of five thouſand pounds per annum, by the death of an uncle; that he was intitled to an equal fortune at the deceaſe of his own father, excluſive of two conſiderable jointures, which would devolve upon him at the demiſe of his mother and aunt. This report (falſe and ridiculous as it was) he could not find in his heart to contradict; not but that he was ſorry to find himſelf ſo miſrepreſented: but his vanity would not allow him to take any ſtep that might diminiſh his importance in the opinion of thoſe who courted his acquaintance, on the ſuppoſition that his circumſtances were actually as affluent as they were ſaid to be. Nay, ſo much was he infatuated by this weakneſs, that he reſolved to encourage the deception, by living up to the report: and accordingly engaged in the moſt expenſive parties of pleaſure; believing that, before his preſent finances ſhould be exhauſted, his fortune would be effectually made, by the perſonal accompliſhments he ſhould have occaſion to diſplay to the beau monde, in the courſe of his extravagance. In a word, vanity and pride were the ruling foibles of our adventurer, who imagined himſelf ſufficiently qualified to retrieve his fortune in various ſhapes, long before he could have any idea of want or difficulty. He thought he ſhould have it in his power, at any time, to make prize of a rich heireſs, or opulent widow: his ambition had already aſpired to the heart of a young handſome ducheſs dowager, to whoſe acquaintance he had found means to be introduced; or, ſhould matrimony chance to be unſuitable to his inclinations, he never doubted, that by the intereſt he might acquire among the nobility, he ſhould be favoured with ſome

ſome lucrative poſt, that would amply recompenſe him for the liberality of his diſpoſition. There are many young men who entertain the ſame expectations, with half the reaſon he had to be ſo preſumptuous.

In the midſt of theſe chimerical calculations, his paſſion for Emilia did not ſubſide; but, on the contrary, began to rage to ſuch an inflammation of deſire, that her idea interfered with every other reflection, and abſolutely diſabled him from proſecuting the other lofty ſchemes which his imagination had projected. He therefore laid down the honeſt reſolution of viſiting her in all the ſplendor of his ſituation, in order to practiſe upon her virtue with all his art and addreſs, to the utmoſt extent of his influence and fortune. Nay, ſo effectually had his guilty paſſion abſorbed his principles of honour, conſcience, humanity, and regard for the commodore's laſt words, that he was baſe enough to rejoice at the abſence of his friend Godfrey, who being then with his regiment in Ireland, could not dive into his purpoſe, or take meaſures for fruſtrating his vicious deſign.

Fraught with theſe heroick ſentiments, he determined to ſet out for Suſſex in his chariot and ſix, attended by his valet de chambre and two footmen; and as he was now ſenſible, that in his laſt eſſay he had miſtaken his cue, he determined to change his battery, and ſap the fortreſs by the moſt ſubmiſſive, ſoft, and inſinuating behaviour.

On the evening that preceded this purpoſed expedition, he went into one of the boxes at the playhouſe, as uſual, to ſhew himſelf to the ladies; and in reconnoitering the company through a glaſs, (for no other reaſon, but becauſe it was faſhionable to be purblind) perceived his miſtreſs very plainly dreſſed, in one of the ſeats above the ſtage, talking to another young woman of a very homely appearance. Though his heart beat the alarm with the utmoſt impatience at ſight of his Emilia, he was for ſome minutes deterred from obeying the impulſe of his love, by the preſence of ſome

ladies of faſhion, who, he feared, would think the worſe of him, ſhould they ſee him make his compliment in publick to a perſon of her figure. Nor would the violence of his inclination have ſo far prevailed over his pride, as to lead him thither, had not he recollected, that his quality friends would look upon her as ſome handſome Abigail, with whom he had an affair of gallantry, and of conſequence give him credit for the intrigue. Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, he complied with the dictates of love, and flew to the place where his charmer ſat. His air and dreſs were ſo remarkable, that it was almoſt impoſſible he ſhould have eſcaped the eyes of a curious obſerver, eſpecially as he had choſen a time for coming in, when his entrance could not fail to attract the notice of the ſpectators; I mean, when the whole houſe was huſhed in attention to the performance on the ſtage. Emilia, therefore, perceived him at his firſt approach; ſhe found herſelf diſcovered by the direction of his glaſs, and gueſſing his intention by his abrupt retreat from the box, ſummoned all her fortitude to her aid, and prepared for his reception. He advanced to her with an air of eagerneſs and joy, tempered with modeſty and reſpect, and expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing her, with a ſeeming reverence of regard. Though ſhe was extremely well pleaſed at this unexpected behaviour, ſhe ſuppreſſed the emotions of her heart, and anſwered his compliments with affected eaſe and unconcern, ſuch as might denote the good-humour of a perſon who meets by accident with an indifferent acquaintance. After having certified himſelf of her own good health, he very kindly enquired about her mother and Miſs Sophy; gave her to underſtand, that he had lately been favoured with a letter from Godfrey; that he had actually intended to ſet out next morning on a viſit to Mrs. Gauntlet, which (now that he was ſo happy as to meet with her) he would poſtpone, until he ſhould have the pleaſure of attending her to the country. After having thanked him for his polite intention, ſhe told him, that her mother was expected in town in a few days, and that ſhe herſelf had

come

come to London some weeks ago, to give her attendance upon her aunt, who had been dangerously ill, but was now pretty well recovered.

Although the conversation of course turned upon general topicks, during the entertainment he took all opportunities of being particular with his eyes, through which he conveyed a thousand tender protestations. She saw, and inwardly rejoiced at the humility of his looks; but far from rewarding it with one approving glance, she industriously avoided this ocular intercourse, and rather coquetted with a young gentleman that ogled her from the opposite box. Peregrine's penetration easily detected her sentiments, and he was nettled at her dissimulation, which served to confirm him in his unwarrantable designs upon her person. He persisted in his assiduities with indefatigable perseverance: when the play was concluded, handed her and her companion to an hackney-coach, and with difficulty was permitted to escort them to the house of Emilia's uncle, to whom our hero was introduced by the young lady, as an intimate friend of her brother Godfrey.

The old gentleman, who was no stranger to the nature of Peregrine's connection with his sister's family, prevailed upon him to stay supper, and seemed particularly well pleased with his conversation and deportment, which, by help of his natural sagacity, he wonderfully adapted to the humour of his entertainer. After supper, when the ladies were withdrawn, and the citizen called for his pipe, our sly adventurer followed his example. Though he abhorred the plant, he smoaked with an air of infinite satisfaction, and expatiated upon the virtues of tobacco, as if he had been deeply concerned in the Virginia trade. In the progress of the discourse, he consulted the merchant's disposition; and the national debt coming upon the carpet, held forth upon the funds like a professed broker. When the alderman complained of the restrictions and discouragement of trade, his guest inveighed against exorbitant duties, with the nature of which he seemed as well

well acquainted as any commiſſioner of the cuſtoms; ſo that the uncle was aſtoniſhed at the extent of his knowledge, and expreſſed his ſurpriſe, that a gay young gentleman like him, ſhould have found either leiſure or inclination to conſider ſubjects ſo foreign to the faſhionable amuſements of youth.

Pickle laid hold on this opportunity to tell him, that he was deſcended from a race of merchants; and, that early in life, he had made it his buſineſs to inſtruct himſelf in the different branches of trade, which he not only ſtudied as his family profeſſion, but alſo as the ſource of all our national riches and power. He then launched out in praiſe of commerce, and the promoters thereof; and by way of contraſt, employed all his ridicule, in drawing ſuch ludicrous pictures of the manners and education of what is called high life, that the trader's ſides were ſhaken by laughter, even to the danger of his life; and he looked upon our adventurer as a miracle of ſobriety and good-ſenſe.

Having thus ingratiated himſelf with the uncle, Peregrine took his leave, and next day in the forenoon viſited the niece in his chariot, after ſhe had been admoniſhed by her kinſman to behave with circumſpection, and cautioned againſt neglecting or diſcouraging the addreſſes of ſuch a valuable admirer.

CHAP. III.

He proſecutes his Deſign upon Emilia with great Art and Perſeverance.

OUR adventurer, having by his hypocriſy obtained free acceſs to his miſtreſs, began the ſiege, by profeſſing the moſt ſincere contrition for his former levity, and imploring her forgiveneſs with ſuch earneſt ſupplication, that, guarded as ſhe was againſt his flattering arts, ſhe began to believe his proteſtations, which were even accompanied with tears, and abated a good deal of that ſeverity and diſtance ſhe had propoſed to maintain during this interview. She would not, however, favour him with the leaſt acknowledgment of a mutual paſſion, becauſe, in the midſt of his vows of eternal

conſtancy and truth, he did not mention one ſyllable of wedlook, though he was now entirely maſter of his own conduct; and this conſideration created a doubt which fortified her againſt all his attacks: yet, what her diſcretion would have concealed, was diſcovered by her eyes, which, in ſpite of all her endeavours, breathed forth complacency and love. For her inclination was flattered by her own ſelf-ſufficiency, which imputed her admirer's ſilence, in that particular, to the hurry and perturbation of his ſpirits, and perſuaded her, that he could not poſſibly regard her with any other than honourable intentions.

The inſidious lover exulted in the tenderneſs of her looks, from which he preſaged a compleat victory; but, that he might not over-ſhoot himſelf by his own precipitation, he would not run the riſk of declaring himſelf, until her heart ſhould be ſo far entangled within his ſnares, as that neither the ſuggeſtions of honour, prudence, or pride, ſhould be able to diſengage it. Armed with this reſolution, he reſtrained the impatience of his temper within the limits of the moſt delicate deportment. After having ſolicited and obtained permiſſion to attend her to the next opera, he took her by the hand, and preſſing it to his lips in the moſt reſpectful manner, went away, leaving her in a moſt whimſical ſtate of ſuſpenſe, chequered with an intereſting viſſicitude of hope and fear.

On the appointed day, he appeared again about five o'clock in the afternoon, and found her native charms ſo much improved by the advantages of dreſs, that he was tranſported with admiration and delight; and while he conducted her to the Hay-Market, could ſcarce bridle the impetuoſity of his paſſion, ſo as to obſerve the forbearing maxims he had adopted. When ſhe entered the pit, he had abundance of food for the gratification of his vanity; for, in a moment, ſhe eclipſed all the female part of the audience, each individual allowing in her own heart, that the ſtranger was

was by far the handſomeſt woman there preſent, except herſelf.

Here it was that our hero enjoyed a double triumph; he was vain of this opportunity to enhance his reputation for gallantry among the ladies of faſhion, who knew him, and proud of an occaſion to diſplay his quality acquaintance to Emilia, that ſhe might entertain the greater idea of the conqueſt ſhe had made, and pay the more deference to his importance in the ſequel of his addreſſes. That he might profit as much as poſſible by this ſituation, he went up and accoſted every perſon in the pit, with whom he ever had the leaſt communication; whiſpered and laughed with an affected air of familiarity, and even bowed at a diſtance to ſome of the nobility, on the ſlender foundation of having ſtood near them at court, or preſented them with a pinch of rappee at White's chocolate-houſe.

This ridiculous oſtentation, though now practiſed with a view of promoting his deſign, was a weakneſs that in ſome degree infected the whole of his behaviour; for nothing gave him ſo much joy in converſation, as an opportunity of giving the company to underſtand, how well he was with perſons of diſtinguiſhed rank and character: he would often (for example) obſerve, as it were occaſionally, that the Duke of G—— was one of the beſt-natured men in the world, and illuſtrate this aſſertion by ſome inſtance of his affability, in which he himſelf was concerned; then, by an abrupt tranſition, he would repeat ſome repartee of Lady T——, and mention a certain bon mot of the Earl of C——, which was uttered in his hearing.

Abundance of young men, in this manner, make free with the names, though they have never had acceſs to the perſons of the nobility; but this was not the caſe with Peregrine, who, in conſideration of his appearance and ſuppoſed fortune, together with the advantage of his introduction, was by this time freely admitted to the tables of the great.

In the return with Emilia from the opera, though he ſtill

ſtill maintained the moſt ſcrupulous decorum in his behaviour, he plied her with the moſt paſſionate expreſſions of love, ſqueezed her hand with great fervency, proteſted that his whole ſoul was engroſſed by her idea, and that he could not exiſt independent of her favour. Pleaſed as ſhe was with his warm and pathetick addreſſes, together with the reſpectful manner of his making love, ſhe yet had prudence and reſolution ſufficient to contain her tenderneſs, which was ready to run over; being fortified againſt his arts, by reflecting, that if his aim was honourable, it was now his buſineſs to declare it. On this conſideration, ſhe refuſed to make any ſerious reply to his earneſt expoſtulations, but affected to receive them as the undetermined effuſions of gallantry and good-breeding.

This fictitious gaiety and good-humour, though it baffled his hope of extorting from her an acknowledgment of which he might have taken immediate advantage, nevertheleſs encouraged him to obſerve, (as the chariots paſſed along the Strand) that the night was far advanced; that ſupper would certainly be over before they could reach her uncle's houſe; and to propoſe, that he ſhould wait upon her to ſome place, where they might be accommodated with a ſlight refreſhment. She was offended at the freedom of this propoſal; which, however, ſhe treated as a joke, thanking him for his courteous offer, and aſſuring him, that when ſhe ſhould be diſpoſed for a tavern treat, he alone ſhould have the honour of beſtowing it.

Her kinſman being engaged with company abroad, and her aunt retired to reſt, he had the good fortune to enjoy a *tête-à-tête* with her during a whole hour, which he employed with ſuch conſummate ſkill, that her caution was almoſt overcome. He not only aſſailed her with the artillery of ſighs, vows, prayers, and tears, but even pawned his honour in behalf of his love. He ſwore with many imprecations, that although her heart were ſurrendered to him at diſcretion, there was a principle within him, which would never allow him to in-
jure

jure such innocence and beauty; and the transports of his passion had, upon this occasion, so far over-shot his purpose, that if she had demanded an explanation, while he was thus agitated, he would have engaged himself to her wish by such ties, as he could not possibly break with any regard to his reputation. But from such expostulation she was deterred, partly by pride, and partly by the dread of finding herself mistaken in such an interesting conjecture. She therefore enjoyed the present flattering appearance of her fate, was prevailed upon to accept the jewels, which he purchased with part of his winning at Bath, and with the most enchanting condescension submitted to a warm embrace; when he took his leave, after having obtained permission to visit her, as often as his inclination and convenience would permit.

In his return to his own lodgings, he was buoyed up with his success to an extravagance of hope; already congratulated himself upon his triumph over Emilia's virtue; and began to project future conquests among the most dignified characters of the female sex. But his attention was not all dissipated by these vain reflections; he resolved to concentrate the whole exertion of his soul upon the execution of his present plan; desisted, in the mean time, from all other schemes of pleasure, interest, and ambition; and took lodgings in the city, for the more commodious accomplishment of his purpose.

While our lover's imagination was thus agreeably regaled, his mistress did not enjoy her expectations, without the intervention of doubts and anxiety. His silence touching the final aim of his addresses was a mystery on which she was afraid of exercising her sagacity; and her uncle tormented her with inquiries into the circumstances of Peregrine's professions and deportment. Rather than give this relation the least cause of suspicion, which must have cut off all intercourse betwixt her and her admirer, she said every thing which she thought would satisfy his care and concern for her welfare; and in consequence of such representation, she

enjoyed,

enjoyed, without reserve, the company of our adventurer, who prosecuted his plan with surprizing eagerness and perseverance.

CHAP. IV.

He prevails upon Emilia to accompany him to a Masquerade; makes a treacherous Attempt upon her Affection, and meets with a deserved Repulse.

SCARCE a night elapsed in which he did not conduct her to some publick entertainment. When, by the dint of his insiduous carriage, he thought himself in full possession of her confidence and affection, he lay in wait for an opportunity; and hearing her observe in conversation, that she had never been at a masquerade, begged leave to attend her to the next ball; at the same time, extending his invitation to the young lady, in whose company he had found her at the play, she being present when this subject of discourse was introduced. He had flattered himself that this gentlewoman would decline the proposal, as she was a person seemingly of a demure disposition, who had been born and bred in the city, where such diversions are looked upon as scenes of lewdness and debauchery. For once, however, he reckoned without his host; curiosity is as prevalent in the city as at the court end of the town: Emilia no sooner signified her assent to his proposal, than her friend, with an air of satisfaction, agreed to make one of the *partie*; and he was obliged to thank her for that complaisance which laid him under infinite mortification. He set his genius at work, to invent some scheme for preventing her unseasonable intrusion. Had an opportunity offered, he would have acted as her physician, and administered a medicine that would have laid her under the necessity of staying at home; but his acquaintance with her being too slight to furnish him with the means of executing this expedient, he devised another, which was practised with all imaginable success. Understanding that her grandmother had left her a sum of money independent of her parents, he conveyed a letter to her mother, intimating, that her daughter,

daughter, on pretence of going to the masquerade, intended to bestow herself in marriage on a certain person, and that in a few days she would be informed of the circumstances of the whole intrigue, provided she would keep this information secret, and contrive some excuse for detaining the young lady at home, without giving her cause to believe she was apprized of her intention. This billet, subscribed, 'Your well-wisher, and unknown humble servant,' had the desired effect upon the careful matron; who, on the ball-day, feigned herself so extremely ill, that Miss could not, with any decency, quit her mamma's apartment; and therefore sent her apology to Emilia in the afternoon, immediately after the arrival of Peregrine, who pretended to be very much afflicted with the disappointment, while his heart throbbed with a transport of joy.

About ten o'clock the lovers set out for the Hay-Market, he being dressed in the habit of a Pantaloon, and she in that of Columbine; and they had scarce entered the house, when the musick struck up, the curtain was withdrawn, and the whole scene displayed at once, to the admiration of Emilia, whose expectation was infinitely surpassed by this exhibition. Our gallant having conducted her through all the different apartments, and described the œconomy of the place, led her into the circle, and, in their turn, they danced several minuets; then going to the side-board, he prevailed upon her to eat some sweetmeats and drink a glass of Champagne. After a second review of the company, they engaged in country-dances, at which exercise they continued, until our adventurer concluded, that his partner's blood was sufficiently warmed for the prosecution of his design. On this supposition, which was built upon her declaring, that she was thirsty and fatigued, he persuaded her to take a little refreshment and repose; and for that purpose, handed her down stairs into the eating-room, where, having seated her on the floor, he presented her with a glass of wine and water; and, as she complained of being faint, enriched the draught

with

with ſome drops of a certain elixir, which he recommended as a moſt excellent reſtorative, though it was no other than a ſtimulative tincture, which he had treacherouſly provided for the occaſion. Having ſwallowed this potion, by which her ſpirits were manifeſtly exhilirated, ſhe ate a ſlice of ham, with the wing of a cold pullet, and concluded the meal with a glaſs of Burgundy, which ſhe drank at the earneſt intreaty of her admirer. Theſe extraordinary cordials co-operating with the ferment of her blood, which was heated by violent motion, could not fail to affect the conſtitution of a delicate young creature, who was naturally ſprightly and volatile. Her eyes began to ſparkle with unuſual fire and vivacity, a thouſand brilliant ſallies of wit eſcaped her, and every maſk that accoſted her underwent ſome ſmarting repartee.

Peregrine, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his adminiſtration, propoſed that they ſhould reſume their places at the country-dances, with a view to promote and aſſiſt the efficacy of his elixir; and when he thought her diſpoſition was properly adapted for the theme, began to ply her with all the elocution of love. In order to elevate his own ſpirits to that pitch of reſolution which his ſcheme required, he drank two whole bottles of Burgundy, which inflamed his paſſion to ſuch a degree, that he found himſelf capable of undertaking and perpetrating any ſcheme for the gratification of his deſire.

Emilia, warmed by ſo many concurring incentives, in favour of the man ſhe loved, abated conſiderably of her wonted reſerve, liſtened to his proteſtations with undiſſembled pleaſure, and in the confidence of her ſatisfaction, even owned him abſolute maſter of her affections. Raviſhed with this confeſſion, he now deemed himſelf on the brink of reaping the delicious fruits of his art and aſſiduity; and the morning being already pretty far advanced, aſſented with rapture to the firſt propoſal ſhe made of retiring to her lodgings. The blinds of the chariot being pulled up, he took advantage of the favourable ſituation of her thoughts, and on

pretence of being whimsical, in consequence of the wine he had swallowed, clasped her in his arms, and imprinted a thousand kisses on her pouting lips, a freedom which she pardoned as the privilege of intoxication. While he thus indulged himself with impunity, the carriage halted, and Pipes opening the door, his master handed her into the passage, before she perceived that it was not her uncle's house, at which they had alighted.

Alarmed at this discovery, she with some confusion desired to know his reason for conducting her to a strange place at these hours: but he made no reply, until he had led her into an apartment, when he gave her to understand, that as her uncle's family must be disturbed by her going thither so late in the night, and the streets near Temple-bar were infested by a multitude of robbers and cut-throats, he had ordered his coachman to halt at this house, which was kept by a relation of his, a mighty good sort of a gentlewoman, who would be proud of an opportunity to accommodate a person for whom he was known to entertain such tenderness and esteem.

Emilia had too much penetration to be imposed upon by this plausible pretext: in spite of her partiality for Peregrine, which had never been inflamed to such a pitch of complacency before, she comprehended his whole plan in a twinkling. Though her blood boiled with indignation, she thanked him with an affected air of serenity for his kind concern, and expressed her obligation to his cousin; but, at the same time, insisted upon going home, lest her absence should terrify her uncle and aunt, who she knew would not retire to rest till her return. He urged her, with a thousand remonstrances, to consult her own ease and safety, promising to send Pipes into the city, for the satisfaction of her relations: but finding her obstinately deaf to his intreaties, he assured her, that he would in a few minutes comply with her request; and, in the mean time, begged she would fortify herself against the cold with a cordial, which he poured out in her presence, and which

which (now that her suspicion was arouzed) she refused to taste, notwithstanding all his importunities. He then fell upon his knees before her, and the tears gushing from his eyes, swore that his passion was wound up to such a pitch of impatience, that he could no longer live upon the unsubstantial food of expectation; and that, if she would not vouchsafe to crown his happiness, he would forthwith sacrifice himself to her disdain. Such an abrupt address, accompanied with all the symptoms of frantick agitation, could not fail to perplex and affright the gentle Emilia; who, after some recollection, replied with a resolute tone, that she could not see what reason he had to complain of her reserve, which she was not at liberty to lay entirely aside, until he should have avowed his intentions in form, and obtained the sanction of those whom it was her duty to obey. 'Divine creature!' cried he, seizing her hand, and pressing it to his lips, 'it is from you alone I hope for that condescension, which would overwhelm me with transports of celestial bliss. The sentiments of parents are sordid, silly, and confined; seek not then to subject my passion to such low restrictions as were calculated for the purposes of common life. My love is too delicate and refined to wear those vulgar fetters, which serve only to destroy the merit of voluntary affection, and to upbraid a man incessantly with the articles of compulsion, under which he lies. My dear angel! spare me the mortification of being compelled to love you, and reign sole empress of my heart and fortune. I will not affront you so much as to talk of settlements; my all is at your dispofal. In this pocket-book are notes to the amount of two thousand pounds; do me the pleasure to accept of them; to-morrow I will lay ten thousand more in your lap. In a word, you shall be mistress of my whole estate, and I shall think myself happy in living dependent on your bounty!'

Heavens! what were the emotions of the virtuous, the sensible, the delicate, the tender Emilia's heart, when she heard this insolent declaration from the mouth

of a man whom ſhe had honoured with her affection and eſteem! It was not ſimply horror, grief, or indignation, that ſhe felt, in conſequence of this unworthy treatment, but the united pangs of all together, which produced a ſort of hyſterick laugh, while ſhe told him, that ſhe could not help admiring his generoſity.

Deceived by this convulſion, and the ironical compliment that attended it, the lover thought he had already made great progreſs in his operations, and that it was now his buſineſs to ſtorm the fort by a vigorous aſſault, that he might ſpare her the confuſion of yielding without reſiſtance. Poſſeſſed by this vain ſuggeſtion, he ſtarted up, and folding her in his arms, began to obey the furious dictates of his unruly and ungenerous deſire. With an air of cool determination, ſhe demanded a parley; and when, upon her repeated requeſt, he granted it, addreſſed herſelf to him in theſe words, while her eyes gleamed with all the dignity of the moſt awful reſentment. 'Sir, I ſcorn to upbraid you with a repetition of your former vows and proteſtations, nor will I recapitulate the little arts you have practiſed to enſnare my heart; becauſe, though by dint of the moſt perfidious diſſimulation, you have found means to deceive my opinion, your utmoſt efforts have never been able to lull the vigilance of my conduct, or to engage my affection beyond the power of diſcarding you without a tear, whenever my honour ſhould demand ſuch a ſacrifice. Sir, you are unworthy of my concern or regret, and the ſigh that now ſtruggles from my breaſt, is the reſult of ſorrow, for my own want of diſcernment. As for your preſent attempt upon my chaſtity, I deſpiſe your power as I deteſt your intention. Though, under the maſk of the moſt delicate reſpect, you have decoyed me from the immediate protection of my friends, and contrived other impious ſtratagems to ruin my peace and reputation, I confide too much in my own innocence, and the authority of the law, to admit one thought of fear, much leſs to ſink under the horror of this ſhocking ſituation, into which I have

been

been seduced. Sir, your behaviour on this occasion, is, in all respects, low and contemptible: for, ruffian as you are, you durst not harbour one thought of executing your execrable scheme, while you knew my brother was near enough to prevent or revenge the insult; so that you must not only be a treacherous villain, but a most despicable coward!' Having expressed herself in this manner, with a most majestick severity of aspect, she opened the door, and walking down stairs with surprizing resolution, committed herself to the care of a watchman, who accommodated her with a hackney chair, in which she was safely conveyed to her uncle's house.

Meanwhile, the lover was so confounded and overawed by these cutting reproaches, and her animated behaviour, that all his resolution forsook him, and he found himself not only incapable of obstructing her retreat, but even of uttering one syllable to deprecate her wrath, or extenuate the guilt of his own conduct. The nature of his disappointment, and the keen remorse that seized him, when he reflected upon the dishonourable footing on which his character stood with Emilia, raised such perturbation in his mind, that his silence was succeeded by a violent fit of distraction, during which he raved like a Bedlamite, and acted a thousand extravagances, which convinced the people of the house (a certain bagnio) that he had actually lost his wits. Pipes, with great concern, adopted the same opinion; and, being assisted by the waiters, hindered him, by main force, from running out and pursuing the fair fugitive; whom, in his delirium, he alternately cursed and commended, with horrid imprecations an lavish applause. His faithful valet, having waited two whole hours, in hope of seeing this gust of passion overblown, and perceiving that the paroxysm seemed rather to increase, very prudently sent for a physician of his master's acquaintance; who having considered the circumstances and symptoms of the disorder, directed that he should be plentifully blooded, without loss of time, and

preſcribed a draught to compoſe the tumult of his ſpirits. Theſe orders being punctually performed, he grew more calm and tractable; recovered his reflection ſo far, as to be aſhamed of the extaſy he had undergone; ſuffered himſelf quietly to be undreſſed, and put to bed; where the fatigue occaſioned by his exerciſe at the maſquerade, co-operated with the preſent diſſipation of his ſpirits to lull him into a profound ſleep, which greatly tended to the preſervation of his intellects: not that he found himſelf in a ſtate of perfect tranquillity, when he awaked about noon. The remembrance of what had paſſed overwhelmed him with mortification. Emilia's invectives ſtill ſounded in his ears: and while he deeply reſented her diſdain, he could not help admiring her ſpirit, and in his heart did homage to her charms.

CHAP. V.

He endeavours to reconcile himſelf to his Miſtreſs, and expoſtulates with the Uncle, who forbids him the Houſe.

IN this ſtate of diviſion, he went home to his own lodgings in a chair; and while he deliberated with himſelf whether he ſhould relinquiſh the purſuit, and endeavour to baniſh her idea from his breaſt, or go immediately and humble himſelf before his exaſperated miſtreſs, and offer his hand as an atonement for his crime, his ſervant put in his hand a packet, which had been delivered by a ticket-porter at the door. He no ſooner perceived that the ſuperſcription was in Emilia's handwriting, than he gueſſed the nature of the contents; and opening the ſeal with diſordered eagerneſs, found the jewels he had given to her, incloſed in a billet couched in theſe words—

'THAT I may have no cauſe to reproach 'myſelf with having retained the leaſt memorial of a 'wretch whom I equally deſpiſe and abhor, I take this 'opportunity of reſtoring theſe ineffectual inſtruments 'of his infamous deſign upon the honour of

'EMILIA.'

His chagrin was ſo much galled and inflamed at the bitterneſs of this contemptuous meſſage, that he gnawed

his

his fingers till the blood ran over his nails, and even wept with vexation. Sometimes he vowed revenge against her haughty virtue, and reviled himself for his precipitate declaration, before his scheme was brought to maturity; then he would consider her behaviour with reverence and regard, and bow before the irresistible power of her attractions. In short, his breast was torn by conflicting passions; love, shame, and remorse, contended with vanity, ambition, and revenge; and the superiority was still doubtful, when headstrong desire interposed, and decided in favour of an attempt towards a reconciliation with the offended fair.

Impelled by this motive, he set out in the afternoon for the house of her uncle, not without hopes of that tender enjoyment which never fails to attend an accommodation betwixt two lovers of taste and sensibility. Though the consciousness of his trespass encumbered him with air of aukward confusion, he was too confident of his own qualifications and address to despair of forgiveness; and by that time he arrived at the citizen's gate, he had conned a very artful and pathetick harangue, which he proposed to utter in his own behalf, laying the blame of his conduct on the impetuosity of his passion, incensed by the Burgundy, which he had too liberally drank: but he did not meet with an opportunity to avail himself of this preparation. Emilia, suspecting that he would take some step of this kind to retrieve her favour, had gone abroad on pretence of visiting, after having signified to her kinsman, her resolution to avoid the company of Peregrine, on account of some ambiguities which (she said) were last night remarkable in his demeanour at the masquerade. She chose to insinuate her suspicions in these hints, rather than give an explicit detail of the young man's dishonourable contrivance, which might have kindled the resentment of the family to some dangerous pitch of animosity and revenge.

Our adventurer, finding himself baffled in his expectation of seeing her, enquired for the old gentleman,

with

with whom he thought he had influence enough to make his apology good, in caſe he ſhould find him prepoſſeſſed by the young lady's information. But here too he was diſappointed; the uncle had gone to dine in the country, and his wife was indiſpoſed; ſo that he had no pretext for ſtaying in the houſe till the return of his charmer. Being, however, fruitful of expedients, he diſmiſſed his chariot, and took poſſeſſion of a room in a tavern, the windows of which fronted the merchant's gate; and there he propoſed to watch until he ſhould ſee her approach. This ſcheme he put in practice with indefatigable patience, though it was not attended with the expected ſucceſs.

Emilia, whoſe caution was equally vigilant and commendable, foreſeeing that ſhe might be expoſed to the fertility of his invention, came home by a private paſſage, and entered by a poſtern, which was altogether unknown to her admirer; and her uncle did not arrive until it was ſo late that he could not with any decency demand a conference.

Next morning he did not fail to preſent himſelf at the door, and his miſtreſs being denied by her own expreſs direction, inſiſted upon ſeeing the maſter of the houſe; who received him with ſuch coldneſs of civility, as plainly gave him to underſtand, that he was acquainted with the diſpleaſure of his niece. He therefore, with an air of candour, told the citizen, he could eaſily perceive, by his behaviour, that he was the confident of Miſs Emily, of whom he was come to aſk pardon for the offence he had given: and did not doubt, if he could be admitted to her preſence, that he ſhould be able to convince her, that he had not erred intentionally, or at leaſt propoſe ſuch reparation as would effectually atone for his fault.

To this remonſtrance the merchant, without any ceremony or circumlocution, anſwered, that though he was ignorant of the nature of his offence, he was very certain, that it muſt have been ſomething very flagrant that could irritate his niece to ſuch a degree, againſt

a perſon

a perſon for whom ſhe had formerly a moſt particular regard. He owned, ſhe had declared her intention to renounce his acquaintance for ever, and, doubtleſs, ſhe had good reaſon for ſo doing; neither would he undertake to promote an accommodation, unleſs he would give him full power to treat on the ſcore of matrimony, which he ſuppoſed would be the only means of evincing his own ſincerity, and obtaining Emilia's forgiveneſs. Peregrine's pride was kindled by the blunt declaration, which he could not help conſidering as the reſult of a ſcheme concerted betwixt the young lady and her uncle, in order to take the advantage of his heat. He therefore replied, with manifeſt ſigns of diſguſt, that he did not apprehend there was any occaſion for a mediator to reconcile the difference betwixt Emilia and him; and that all he deſired was an opportunity of pleading in his own behalf.

The citizen frankly told him, that as his niece had expreſſed an earneſt deſire of avoiding his company, he would not put the leaſt conſtraint upon her inclination; and in the mean time gave him to know, that he was particularly engaged.

Our hero glowing with indignation at this ſupercilious treatment; 'I was in the wrong,' ſaid he, 'to look for good-manners ſo far on this ſide of Temple-bar: but you muſt give me leave to tell you, Sir, that unleſs I am favoured with an interview with Miſs Gauntlet, I ſhall conclude, that you have actually laid a conſtraint upon her inclination for ſome ſiniſter purpoſes of your own.'—'Sir,' replied the old gentleman, 'you are welcome to make what concluſions ſhall ſeem good unto your own imagination; but, pray be ſo good as to allow me the privilege of being maſter in my own houſe.' So ſaying, he very complaiſantly ſhewed him to the door; and our lover being diffident of his own temper, as well as afraid of being uſed with greater indignity, in a place where his perſonal proweſs would only ſerve to heighten his diſgrace, quitted the houſe in a tranſport of rage which he could not wholly ſuppreſs,

telling

telling the landlord, that if his age did not protect him, he would have chastised him for his insolent behaviour.

CHAP. VI.

He projects a violent Scheme, in Consequence of which he is involved in a most fatiguing Adventure, which greatly tends towards the Augmentation of his Chagrin.

THUS debarred of personal communication with his mistress, he essayed to retrieve her good graces by the most submissive and pathetick letters, which he conveyed by divers artifices to her perusal; but reaping no manner of benefit from these endeavours, his passion acquired a degree of impatience, little inferior to downright frenzy; and he determined to run every risk of life, fortune, and reputation, rather than desist from his unjustifiable pursuit. Indeed, his resentment was now as deeply concerned as his love, and each of these passions equally turbulent and loud in demanding gratification. He kept centinels continually in pay, to give him notice of her outgoings, in expectation of finding some opportunity to carry her off; but her circumspection entirely frustrated his design; for she suspected every thing of that sort from a disposition like his, and regulated her motions accordingly.

Baffled by her prudence and penetration, he altered his plan. On pretence of being called to his country-house by some affair of importance, he departed from London, and taking lodgings at a farmer's house, that stood near the road through which she must have necessarily passed, in her return to her mother, concealed himself from all intercourse, except with his valet de chambre and Pipes, who had orders to scour the country, and reconnoitre every horse, coach, or carriage, that should appear on that highway, with a view of intercepting his Amanda in her passage.

He had waited in this ambuscade a whole week, when his valet gave him notice, that he and his fellow-scout had discovered a chaise and six, driving at full speed towards them; upon which, they had flapped

their hats over their eyes, so as that they might not be known, in case they should be seen, and concealed themselves behind a hedge, from whence they could perceive in the carriage, as it passed, a young man plainly dressed, with a lady in a mask, of the exact size, shape, and air of Emilia; and that Pipes followed them at a distance, while he rode back to communicate this piece of intelligence.

Peregrine would scarce allow him time to conclude his information; he ran down to the stable, where his horse was kept ready saddled for the purpose, and never doubting that the lady in question was his mistress, attended by one of her uncle's clerks, mounted immediately, and rode full gallop after the chaise, which, when he had proceeded about two miles, he understood from Pipes had put up at a neighbouring inn. Though his inclination prompted him to enter her apartment without farther delay, he suffered himself to be dissuaded from taking such a precipitate step, by his privy counsellor, who observed, that it would be impracticable to execute his purpose of conveying her against her will from a publick inn, that stood in the midst of a populous village, which would infallibly rise in her defence. He advised him, therefore, to lie in wait for the chaise, in some remote and private part of the road, where they might accomplish their aim without difficulty or danger. In consequence of this admonition, our adventurer ordered Pipes to reconnoitre the inn, that she might not escape another way, while he and the valet, in order to avoid being seen, took a circuit by an unfrequented path, and placed themselves in ambush, on a spot which they chose for the scene of their atchievement. Here they tarried a full hour, without seeing the carriage, or hearing from their centinel: so that the youth, unable to exert his patience one moment longer, left the foreigner in his station, and rode back to his faithful lacquey, who assured him, that the travellers had not yet hove up their anchor, or proceeded on their voyage.

Notwith-

Notwithstanding this intimation, Pickle began to entertain such alarming suspicions, that he could not refrain from advancing to the gate, and enquiring for the company which had lately arrived in a chaise and six. The inn-keeper, who was not at all pleased with the behaviour of those passengers, did not think proper to observe the instructions he had received; on the contrary, he plainly told him, that the chaise did not halt, but only entered at one door, and went out at the other, with a view to deceive those who pursued it, as he guessed from the words of the gentleman, who had earnestly desired, that his rout might be concealed from any person who should enquire about their motions. 'As for my own peart, measter,' continued this charitable publican, 'I believe as how they are no better than they should be, else they wouldn't be in such a deadly fear of being overtaken. "Methinks," said I, when I saw them in such a woundy pother to be gone, "oddsheartikins! this must be some London 'prentice running away with his measter's daughter, as sure as I am a living soul." But, be he who he will, sartain it is, a has nothing of the gentleman about en; for, thof a axed such a favour, a never once put hand in pocket, or said, "Dog, will you drink?" Howsomever, that don't argufy in reverence of his being in a hurry; and a man may be sometimes a little too judgmatical in his conjectures.' In all probability, this loquacious landlord would have served the traveller effectually, had Peregrine heard him to an end; but this impetuous youth, far from listening to the sequel of his observations, interrupted him in the beginning of his career, by asking eagerly, which road they followed; and having received the inn-keeper's direction, clapped spurs to his horse, commanding Pipes to make the valet acquainted with his course, that they might attend him with all imaginary dispatch.

By the publican's account of their conduct, his former opinion was fully confirmed; he plied the steed to the height of his mettle, and so much was his imagina-

tion

tion ingroffed by the profpect of having Emilia in his power, that he did not perceive the road on which he travelled was quite different from that which led to the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet. The valet de chambre was an utter ftranger to that part of the country; and as for Mr. Pipes, fuch confiderations were altogether foreigh to the œconomy of his reflection.

Ten long miles had our hero rode, when his eyes were bleffed with the fight of the chaife afcending a hill, at the diftance of a good league; upon which he doubled his diligence in fuch a manner, that he gained upon the carriage every minute, and at length approached fo near to it, that he could difcern the lady and her conductor, with their heads thruft out at the windows, looking back, and fpeaking to the driver alternately, as if they earneftly befought him to augment the fpeed of his cattle.

Being thus, as it were, in fight of port, while he croffed the road, his horfe happened to plunge into a cart-rut with fuch violence, that he was thrown feveral yards over his head; and the beaft's fhoulder being flipped by the fall, he found himfelf difabled from plucking the fruit, which was almoft within his reach; for he had left his fervants at a confiderable diftance behind him; and although they had been at his back, and fupplied him with another horfe, they were fo indifferently mounted, that he could not reafonably expect to overtake the flyers, who profited fo much by this difafter, that the chaife vanifhed in a moment.

It may be eafily conceived, how a young man of his difpofition paffed his time in this tantalizing fituation. He ejaculated with great fervency, but his prayers were not the effects of refignation. He ran back on foot with incredible fpeed, in order to meet his valet, whom he unhorfed in a twinkling; and, taking his feat, began to exercife his whip and fpurs, after having ordered the Swifs to follow him on the other gelding, and committed the lame hunter to the care of Pipes.

Matters being adjufted in this manner, our adven-

turer profecuted the race with all his might; and having made fome progrefs, was informed by a countryman, that the chaife had ftruck off into another road, and, according to his judgment, was by that time about three miles a-head; though, in all probability, the horfes would not be able to hold out much longer, becaufe they feemed to be quite fpent when they paffed his door. Encouraged by this intimation, Peregrine pufhed on with great alacrity; though he could not regain fight of the defired object, till the clouds of night began to deepen, and even then he enjoyed nothing more than a tranfient glimpfe; for the carriage was no fooner feen, than fhrouded again from his view. Thefe vexatious circumftances animated his endeavours, while they irritated his chagrin: in fhort, he continued his purfuit till the night was far advanced, and himfelf fo uncertain about the object of his care, that he entered a folitary inn, with a view of obtaining fome intelligence, when, to his infinite joy, he perceived the chaife ftanding by itfelf, and the horfes panting in the yard. In full confidence of his having arrived at laft at the goal of all his wifhes, he alighted inftantaneoufly, and running up to the coachman, with a piftol in his hand, commanded him, in an imperious tone, to conduct him to the lady's chamber, on pain of death. The driver, affrighted at this menacing addrefs, protefted with great humility, that he did not know whither his fare had retired; for that he himfelf was paid and difmiffed from this fervice, becaufe he would not undertake to drive them all night acrofs the country, without ftopping to refrefh his horfes; but he promifed to go in queft of the waiter, who would fhew him to their apartment. He was accordingly detached on that errand, while our hero ftood centinel at the gate, till the arrival of his valet de chambre, who joining him by accident, before the coachman returned, relieved him in his watch; and then the young gentleman, exafperated at his meffenger's delay, rufhed with fury in his eyes from room to room, denouncing vengeance

geance upon the whole family; but he did not meet with one living ſoul, until he entered the garret, where he found the landlord and his wife in bed. This chicken-hearted couple, by the light of a ruſh-candle that burned on the hearth, ſeeing a ſtranger burſt into the chamber, in ſuch a terrible attitude, were ſeized with conſternation; and exalting their voices, in a moſt lamentable ſtrain, begged for the paſſion of Chriſt, that he would ſpare their lives, and take all they had.

Peregrine gueſſing from this exclamation, and the circumſtance of their being a-bed, that they miſtook him for a robber, and were ignorant of that which he wanted to know, diſpelled their terror, by making them acquainted with the cauſe of his viſit, and deſired the huſband to get up with all poſſible diſpatch, in order to aſſiſt and attend him in his ſearch.

Thus reinforced, he rummaged every corner of the inn, and at laſt finding the hoſtler in the ſtable, was by him informed, (to his unſpeakable mortification) that the gentleman and lady who arrived in the chaiſe, had immediately hired poſt-horſes for a certain village at the diſtance of fifteen miles, and departed without halting for the leaſt refreſhment. Our adventurer, mad with his diſappointment, mounted his horſe in an inſtant, and, with his attendant, took the ſame road, with full determination to die, rather than deſiſt from the proſecution of his deſign. He had, by this time, rode upwards of thirty miles ſince three o'clock in the afternoon; ſo that the horſes were almoſt quite jaded, and travelled this ſtage ſo ſlowly, that it was morning before they reached the place of their deſtination, where, far from finding the fugitives, he underſtood, that no ſuch perſons as he deſcribed had paſſed that way, and that in all likelihood they had taken a quite contrary direction, while, in order to miſlead him in his purſuit, they had amuſed the hoſtler with a falſe route. This conjecture was ſtrengthened by his perceiving, (now, for the firſt time) that he had deviated a conſiderable way from the road, through which they

must have journeyed, in order to arrive at the place of her mother's residence; and these suggestions utterly deprived him of the small remains of recollection, which he had hitherto retained. His eyes rolled about, witnessing rage and distraction; he foamed at the mouth, stamped upon the ground with great violence, uttered incoherent imprecations against himself and all mankind, and would have sallied forth again he knew not whither, upon the same horse, which he had already almost killed with fatigue, had not his confident found means to quiet the tumult of his thoughts, and recal his reflection, by representing the condition of the poor animals, and advising him to hire fresh horses, and ride post across the country, to the village in the neighbourhood of Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation, where they should infallibly intercept the daughter, provided they could get the start of her upon the road.

Peregrine not only relished, but forthwith acted in conformity with this good counsel. His own horses were committed to the charge of the landlord, with directions for Pipes, in case he should come in quest of his master; and a couple of stout geldings being prepared, he and his valet took the road again, steering their course according to the motions of the post-boy, who undertook to be their guide. They had almost finished the first stage, when they they descried a post-chaise just halting at the inn where they proposed to change horses; upon which our adventurer, glowing with a most interesting presage, put his beast to the full speed, and approached near enough to distinguish, as the travellers quitted the carriage, that he had at last come up with the very individual persons whom he had pursued so long.

Flushed with this discovery, he galloped into the yard so suddenly, that the lady and her conductor scarce had time to shut themselves up in a chamber, to which they retreated with great precipitation; so that the pursuer was now certain of having housed his prey. That he might, however, leave nothing to fortune, he placed

placed himſelf upon the ſtair, by which they had aſcended to the apartment, and ſent up his compliments to the young lady, deſiring the favour of being admitted to her preſence, otherwiſe he ſhould be obliged to wave all ceremony, and take that liberty which ſhe would not give. The ſervant having conveyed his meſſage through the key-hole, returned with an anſwer, importing, that ſhe would adhere to the reſolution ſhe had taken, and periſh rather than comply with his will. Our adventurer, without ſtaying to make any rejoinder to this reply, ran up ſtairs, and thundering at the door for entrance, was given to underſtand by the nymph's attendant, that he would do well to ſpare him the neceſſity of ſhedding blood, in defence of a perſon who had put herſelf under his protection. 'All the laws of the land,' ſaid he, 'cannot now untie the knots by which we are bound together; and therefore I will guard her as my own property; ſo that you had better deſiſt from your fruitleſs attempt, and thereby conſult your own ſafety: for, by the God that made me! I will diſcharge my piece upon you, as ſoon as you ſet your noſe within the door; and your blood be upon your own head.' Theſe menaces from a citizen's clerk would have been ſufficient motives for Pickle to ſtorm the breach, although they had not been reinforced by that declaration, which informed him of Emilia's having beſtowed herſelf in marriage upon ſuch a contemptible rival. This ſole conſideration added wings to his impetuoſity, and he applied his foot to the door with ſuch irreſiſtible force, as burſted it open in an inſtant, entering at the ſame time with a piſtol ready cocked in his hand. His antagoniſt, inſtead of firing his blunderbuſs, when he ſaw him approach, ſtarted back with evident ſigns of ſurprize and conſternation, exclaiming, 'Lord Jeſus! Sir, you are not the man! and, without doubt, are under ſome miſtake with regard to us.'

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this ſalutation, the lady hearing it, advanced to him, and pulling off a

mask, discovered a face which he had never seen before. The Gorgon's head, according to the fables of antiquity, never had a more instantaneous or petrifying effect, than that which this countenance produced in the astonished youth. His eyes were fixed upon this unknown object, as if they had been attracted by the power of enchantment; his feet seemed rivetted to the ground; and after having stood motionless for the space of a few minutes, he dropped down in an apoplexy of disappointment and despair. The Swiss, who had followed him, seeing his master in this condition, lifted him up, and laying him upon a bed in the next room, let him blood immediately, without hesitation, being always provided with a case of lancets, against all accidents on the road. To this foresight our hero, in all probability, was indebted for his life. By virtue of a very copious evacuation, he recovered the use of his senses; but the complication of fatigues, and violent transports which he had undergone, brewed up a dangerous fever in his blood; and a physician being called from the next market-town, several days elapsed before he would answer for his life.

CHAP. VII.

Peregrine sends a Message to Mrs. Gauntlet, who rejects his Proposal. He repairs to the Garrison.

AT length, however, his constitution overcame his disease, though not before it had in a greater measure tamed the fury of his disposition, and brought him to a serious consideration of his conduct. In this humiliation of his spirits, he reflected with shame and remorse upon his treachery to the fair, the innocent Emilia; he remembered his former sentiments in her favour, as well as the injunctions of his dying uncle; he recollected his intimacy with her brother, against which he had so basely sinned; and revolving all the circumstances of her conduct, found it so commendable, spirited, and noble, that he deemed her an object of sufficient dignity to merit his honourable addresses, even though his duty had not been concerned in the decision:

ſion: but, obligated as he was, to make reparation to a worthy family, which he had ſo groſsly injured, he thought he could not manifeſt his reformation too ſoon; and, whenever he found himſelf able to hold a pen, wrote a letter to Mrs. Gauntlet, wherein he acknowledged, with many expreſſions of ſorrow and contrition, that he had acted a part altogether unbecoming a man of honour, and ſhould never enjoy the leaſt tranquillity of mind, until he ſhould have merited her forgiveneſs. He proteſted, that although his happineſs entirely depended upon the determination of Emilia, he would even renounce all hopes of being bleſſed with her favour, if ſhe could point out any other method of making reparation to that amiable young lady, but by laying his heart and fortune at her feet, and ſubmitting himſelf to her pleaſure during the remaining part of his life. He conjured her, therefore, in the moſt pathetick manner, to pardon him, in conſideration of his ſincere repentance, and to uſe her maternal influence with her daughter, ſo as that he might be permitted to wait upon her with a wedding-ring, as ſoon as his health would allow him to undertake the journey.

This explanation being diſpatched by Pipes, who had by this time found his maſter, the young gentleman enquired about the couple whom he had ſo unfortunately purſued, and underſtood from his valet de chambre, who learned the ſtory from their own mouths, that the lady was the only daughter of a rich Jew, and her attendant no other than his apprentice, who had converted her to Chriſtianity, and married her at the ſame time; that this ſecret having taken air, the old Iſraelite had contrived a ſcheme to ſeparate them for ever; and they being apprized of his intention, had found means to elope from his houſe, with a view of ſheltering themſelves in France, until the affair could be made up; that ſeeing three men ride after them with ſuch eagerneſs and ſpeed, they never doubted that the purſuers were her father, and ſome friends or domeſticks, and on that ſuppoſition had fled with the utmoſt

dispatch and trepidation, until they had found themselves happily undeceived, at that very instant when they expected nothing but mischief and misfortune: lastly, the Swiss gave him to understand, that having professed some concern for his deplorable situation, and enjoyed a slight refreshment, they had taken their departure for Dover, and in all likelihood were safely arrived at Paris.

In four and twenty hours after Pipes was charged with his commission, he brought back an answer from the mother of Emilia, couched in these words.

'SIR,

'I RECEIVED the favour of yours, and 'am glad, for your own sake, that you have attained a 'due sense and conviction of your unkind and unchristian behaviour to poor Emy. I thank God, none of 'my children were ever so insulted before. Give me 'leave to tell you, Sir, my daughter was no upstart 'without friends or education, but a young lady as 'well bred, and better born, than most private gentlewomen in the kingdom: and therefore, though you 'had no esteem for her person, you ought to have paid 'some regard to her family, which (no disparagement 'to you, Sir) is more honourable than your own. As 'for your proposal, Miss Gauntlet will not hear of it, 'being that she thinks her honour will not allow her to 'listen to any terms of reconciliation; and she is not 'yet so destitute, as to embrace an offer to which she 'has the least objection. In the mean time, she is so 'much indisposed, that she cannot possibly see company; 'so I beg you will not take the trouble of making 'a fruitless journey to this place. Perhaps your future conduct may deserve her forgiveness; and really, 'as I am concerned for your happiness, which you assure me depends upon her condescension, I wish with 'all my heart it may; and am, notwithstanding all that 'has happened, your sincere well-wisher,

'CECILIA GAUNTLET.'

From

From this epiſtle, and the information of his meſſenger, our hero learned, that his miſtreſs had actually profited by his wild-gooſe chace, ſo as to make a ſafe retreat to her mother's houſe. Though ſorry to hear of her indiſpoſition, he was alſo piqued at her implacability, as well as at ſome ſtately paragraphs of the letter, in which (he thought) the good lady had conſulted her own vanity rather than her good ſenſe. Theſe motives of reſentment helped him to bear his diſappointment like a philoſopher, eſpecially as he had now quieted his conſcience, in proffering to redreſs the injury he had done; and, moreover, found himſelf, with regard to his love, in a calm ſtate of hope and reſignation.

A ſeaſonable fit of illneſs is an excellent medicine for the turbulence of paſſion. Such a reformation had the fever produced in the œconomy of his thoughts, that he moralized like an apoſtle, and projected ſeveral prudential ſchemes for his future conduct.

In the mean time, as ſoon as his health was ſufficiently re-eſtabliſhed, he took a trip to the garriſon, in order to viſit his friends; and learned from Hatchway's own mouth, that he had broke the ice of courtſhip to his aunt, and that his addreſſes were now fairly afloat; though when he firſt declared himſelf to the widow, after ſhe had been duly prepared for the occaſion by her niece and the reſt of her friends, ſhe had received his propoſal with a becoming reſerve, and piouſly wept at the remembrance of her huſband, obſerving, that ſhe ſhould never meet with his fellow.

Peregrine promoted the lieutenant's ſuit with all his influence; and all Mrs. Trunnion's objections to the match being ſurmounted, it was determined that the day of marriage ſhould be put off for three months, that her reputation might not ſuffer by a precipitate engagement. His next care was to give orders for erecting a plain marble monument to the memory of his uncle, on which the following inſcription, compoſed by the bridegroom, actually appeared in golden letters.

Here lies,
Foundered in a fathom and half,
The ſhell
Of
HAWSER TRUNNION, Eſq.
Formerly commander of a ſquadron
In his majeſty's ſervice,
Who broach'd to, at five P.M. Oct. X.
In the year of his age
Threeſcore and nineteen.

He kept his guns always loaded,
And his tackle ready manned,
And never ſhewed his poop to the enemy,
Except when he took her in tow;
But, his ſhot being expended,
His match burnt out,
And his upper-works decayed,
He was ſunk
By Death's ſuperior weight of metal.
Nevertheleſs,
He will be weighed again
At the Great Day,
His rigging refitted,
And his timbers repaired;
And, with one broad-ſide,
Make his adverſary
Strike in his turn.

CHAP. VIII.

He returns to London, and meets with Cadwallader, who entertains him with many curious Particulars. Crabtree ſounds the Ducheſs, and undeceives Pickle; who, by an extraordinary Accident, becomes acquainted with another Lady of Quality.

THE young gentleman having performed theſe laſt offices, in honour of his deceaſed benefactor, and preſented Mr. Jolter to the long expected living, which at this time happened to be vacant, returned to London, and reſumed his former gaiety: not that he was able to ſhake Emilia from his thought, or even to remember her without violent emotions; for, as he re-

covered his vigour, his former impatience recurred; and therefore he resolved to plunge himself headlong into some intrigue, that might engage his passions, and amuse his imagination.

A man of his accomplishments could not fail to meet with a variety of subjects, on which his gallantry would have been properly exercised; and this abundance distracted his choice, which at any time was apt to be influenced by caprice and whim. I have already observed, that he had lifted his view, through a matrimonial perspective, as high a lady of the first quality and distinction; and, now that he was refused by Miss Gauntlet, and enjoyed a little respite from the agonies of that flame which her charms had kindled in his heart, he renewed his assiduities to her grace. Though he durst not yet risk an explanation, he enjoyed the pleasure of seeing himself so well received in quality of a particular acquaintance, that he flattered himself with the belief of his having made some progress in her heart; and was confirmed in this conceited notion, by the assurances of her woman, whom by liberal largesses he retained in his interest, because she found means to persuade him, that she was in the confidence of her lady. But, notwithstanding this encouragement, and the sanguine suggestions of his own vanity, he dreaded the thoughts of exposing himself to her ridicule and resentment by a premature declaration, and determined to postpone his addresses, until he should be more certified of the probability of succeeding in his attempt.

While he remained in this hesitation and suspense, he was one morning very agreeably surprized with the appearance of his friend Crabtree; who, by the permission of Pipes, to whom he was well known, entered his chamber before he was awake, and, by a violent shake of the shoulder, disengaged him from the arms of sleep. The first compliments having mutually passed, Cadwallader gave him to understand, that he had arrived in town over night in the stage-coach from Bath, and entertained him with such a ludicrous account of

his

his fellow-travellers, that Peregrine, for the firſt time ſince their parting, indulged himſelf in mirth, even to the hazard of ſuffocation.

Crabtree having rehearſed theſe adventures, in ſuch a peculiarity of manner, as added infinite ridicule to every circumſtance, and repeated every ſcandalous report which had circulated at the Bath after Peregrine's departure, was informed by the youth, that he harboured a deſign upon the perſon of ſuch a ducheſs, and all in appearance had no reaſon to complain of his reception; but, that he would not venture to declare himſelf, until he ſhould be more aſcertained of her ſentiments: and therefore, he begged leave to depend upon the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader, who, he knew, was admitted to her parties.

The miſanthrope, before he would promiſe his aſſiſtance, aſked if his proſpect verged towards matrimony; and our adventurer (who gueſſed the meaning of his queſtion) replying in the negative, he undertook the office of reconnoitring her inclination; proteſting at the ſame time, that he would never concern himſelf in any ſcheme that did not tend to the diſgrace and deception of all the ſex. On theſe conditions, he eſpouſed the intereſt of our hero; and a plan was immediately concerted, in conſequence of which they met by accident at her grace's table. Pickle having ſtayed all the fore-part of the evening, and ſat out all the company, except the miſanthrope and a certain widow lady, who was ſaid to be in the ſecrets of my lady ducheſs, went away on pretence of an indiſpenſable engagement, that Crabtree might have a proper opportunity of making him the ſubject of converſation.

Accordingly, he had ſcarce quitted the apartment, when this cynic attended him to the door, with a look of moroſe diſdain.—'Were I an abſolute prince,' ſaid he, 'and that fellow one of my ſubjects, I would order him to be cloathed in ſack-cloth, and he ſhould drive my aſſes to water, that his lofty ſpirit might be lowered to the level of his deſerts. The pride of a peacock is

is downright ſelf-denial, when compared with the vanity of that coxcomb, which was naturally arrogant, but is now rendered altogether intolerable, by the reputation he acquired at Bath, for kicking a bully, outwitting a club of raw ſharpers, and divers other pranks, in the execution of which he was more lucky than wiſe. But nothing has contributed ſo much to the increaſe of his inſolence and ſelf-conceit, as the favour he found among the ladies. Aye, the ladies, Madam! I care not who knows it: the ladies, who (to their honour be it ſpoken) never fail to patronize foppery and folly, provided they ſolicit their encouragement. And yet this dog was not on the footing of thoſe hermaphroditical animals, who may be reckoned among the number of waiting-women, who air your ſhifts, comb your lap-dogs, examine your noſes with magnifying glaſſes in order to ſqueeze out the worms, clean your teeth-bruſhes, ſweeten your handkerchiefs, and ſoften waſte-paper for your occaſions. This fellow, Pickle, was entertained for more important purpoſes; his turn of duty never came till thoſe lapwings were gone to rooſt; when he ſcaled windows, leaped over garden-walls, and was let in by Mrs. Betty in the dark. Nay, the magiſtrates of Bath complimented him with the freedom of the corporation, merely becauſe, through his means, the waters had gained extraordinary credit; for every female of a tolerable appearance, that went thither on account of her ſterility, got the better of her complaint, during his reſidence at the Bath: and now, the fellow thinks no woman can withſtand his addreſſes. He had not been here three minutes, when I could perceive with half an eye that he had marked out your grace for a conqueſt; I mean, in an honourable way; though the raſcal has impudence enough to attempt any thing.' So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon the ducheſs, who (while her face glowed with indignation) turning to her confidante, expreſſed herſelf in theſe words. 'Upon my life! I believe there is actually ſome truth in what this old ruffian ſays; I have

myſelf obſerved that young fellow eyeing me with a very particular ſtare.'—' It is not to be at all wondered at,' ſaid her friend, ' that a youth of his complexion ſhould be ſenſible to the charms of your grace! but I dare ſay, he would not preſume to entertain any but the moſt honourable and reſpectful ſentiments.'—' Reſpectful ſentiments!' cried my lady, with a look of ineffable diſdain; ' if I thought the fellow had aſſurance enough to think of me in any ſhape, I proteſt I would forbid him my houſe. Upon my honour, ſuch inſtances of audacity ſhould induce perſons of quality to keep your ſmall gentry at a greater diſtance; for they are very apt to grow impudent upon the leaſt countenance or encouragement.'

Cadwallader, ſatisfied with this declaration, changed the ſubject of diſcourſe, and next day communicated his diſcovery to his friend Pickle; who, upon this occaſion, felt the moſt ſtinging ſenſations of mortified pride, and reſolved to quit his proſpect with a good grace. Nor did the execution of this ſelf-denying ſcheme coſt him one moment's uneaſineſs; for his heart had never been intereſted in the purſuit, and his vanity triumphed in the thoughts of manifeſting his indifference. Accordingly, the very next time he viſited her grace, his behaviour was remarkably frank, ſprightly, and diſengaged; and the ſubject of love being artfully introduced by the widow, who had been directed to ſound his inclinations, he rallied the paſſion with great eaſe and ſeverity, and made no ſcruple of declaring himſelf heart-whole.

Though the ducheſs had reſented his ſuppoſed affection, ſhe was now offended at his inſenſibility, and even ſignified her diſguſt, by obſerving, that perhaps his attention to his own qualifications ſcreened him from the impreſſion of all other objects.

While he enjoyed this ſarcaſm, the meaning of which he could plainly diſcern, the company was joined by a certain virtuoſo, who had gained free acceſs to all the great families of the land, by his notable talent of goſſipping

sipping and buffoonery. He was now in the seventy-fifth year of his age; his birth was so obscure, that he scarce knew his father's name; his education suitable to the dignity of his descent; his character publickly branded with homicide, profligacy, and breach of trust; yet this man, by the happy inheritance of impregnable effrontery, and a lucky prostitution of all principle in rendering himself subservient to the appetites of the great, had attained to an independency of fortune, as well as to such a particular share of favour among the quality, that although he was well known to have pimped for three generations of the nobility, there was not a lady of fashion in the kingdom who scrupled to admit him to her toilette, or even to be squired by him in any publick place of entertainment. Not but that this sage was occasionally useful to his fellow-creatures, by these connections with people of fortune; for, he often undertook to solicit charity in behalf of distressed objects, with a view of embezzling one half of the benefactions. It was an errand of this kind that now brought him to the house of her grace.

After having sat a few minutes, he told the company, that he would favour them with a very proper opportunity to extend their benevolence, for the relief of a poor gentlewoman, who was reduced to the most abject misery, by the death of her husband, and just delivered of a couple of fine boys. They, moreover, understood from his information, that this object was daughter of a good family, who had renounced her, in consequence of her marrying an ensign without a fortune; and even obstructed his promotion with all their influence and power; a circumstance of barbarity, which had made such an impression upon his mind, as disordered his brain, and drove him to despair, in a fit of which he had made away with himself, leaving his wife, then big with child, to all the horrors of indigence and grief.

Various were the criticisms on this pathetick picture, which the old man drew with great expression.

My lady duchefs concluded, that fhe muft be a creature void of all feeling and reflection, who could furvive fuch aggravated mifery; therefore, did not deferve to be relieved, except in the character of a common beggar; and was generous enough to offer a recommendation, by which fhe would be admitted into an infirmary, to which her grace was a fubfcriber; at the fame time, advifing the folicitor to fend the twins to the Foundling Hofpital, where they would be carefully nurfed and brought up, fo as to become ufeful members to the commonwealth. Another lady, with all due deference to the opinion of the duchefs, was free enough to blame the generofity of her grace, which would only ferve to encourage children in their difobedience to their parents, and might be the means not only of prolonging the diftrefs of the wretched creature, but alfo of ruining the conftitution of fome young heir, perhaps the hope of a great family! for fhe did fuppofe that Madam, when her month fhould be up, and her brats difpofed of, would fpread her attractions to the publick, (provided fhe could profit by her perfon) and, in the ufual way, make a regular progrefs from St. James's to Drury Lane. She apprehended, for thefe reafons, that their compaffion would be moft effectually fhewn, in leaving her to perifh in her prefent neceffity: and that the old gentleman would be unpardonable, fhould he perfift in his endeavours to relieve her. A third member of this tender-hearted fociety, after having afked if the young woman was handfome, and been anfwered in the negative, allowed that there was a great deal of reafon in what had been faid by the honourable perfon who fpoke laft; neverthelefs, fhe humbly conceived her fentence would admit of fome mitigation. 'Let the bantlings,' faid fhe, 'be fent to the hofpital, according to the advice of her grace, and a fmall collection be made for the prefent fupport of the mother; and when her health is recovered, I will take her into my family, in quality of an upper fervant, or medium between me and my woman; for, upon my life, I can't

endure

endure to chide, or give directions to a creature, who is, in point of birth and education, but one degree above the vulgar.'

This proposal met with universal approbation. The duchess (to her immortal honour) began the contribution with a crown; so that the rest of the company were obliged to restrict their liberality to half the sum, that her grace might not be affronted: and the proposer demanding the poor woman's name and place of abode, the old mediator could not help giving her ladyship a verbal direction, though he was extremely mortified (on more accounts than one) to find such an issue to his solicitation.

Peregrine, who, *though humorous as winter, had a tear for pity, and an hand open as day for melting charity*, was shocked at the nature and result of this ungenerous consultation. He contributed his half crown, however; and retiring from the company, betook himself to the lodgings of the forlorn lady in the straw, according to the direction he had heard. Upon enquiry, he understood, that she was then visited by some charitable gentlewoman, who had sent for a nurse, and waited the return of the messenger; and he sent up his respects, desiring he might be permitted to see her, on pretence of having been intimate with her late husband.

Though the poor woman had never heard of his name, she did not think proper to deny his request; and he was conducted to a paltry chamber in the third story, where he found this unhappy widow sitting upon a truckle-bed, and suckling one of her infants with the most piteous expression of anguish in her features, which were naturally regular and sweet; while the other was fondled on the knee of a person, whose attention was so much engrossed by her little charge, that for the present she could mind nothing else: and it was not till after the first compliments passed betwixt the hapless mother and our adventurer, that he perceived the stranger's countenance, which inspired him with the highest esteem and admiration. He beheld all the

graces of elegance and beauty, breathing ſentiment and beneficence, and ſoftened into the moſt enchanting tenderneſs of weeping ſympathy. When he declared the cauſe of his viſit, which was no other than the deſire of befriending the diſtreſſed lady, to whom he preſented a bank-note for twenty pounds, he was favoured with ſuch a look of complacency by this amiable phantom, who might have been juſtly taken for an angel miniſtering to the neceſſities of mortals, that his whole ſoul was tranſported with love and veneration. Nor was this prepoſſeſſion diminiſhed by the information of the widow; who, after having manifeſted her gratitude in a flood of tears, told him, that the unknown object of his eſteem was a perſon of honour, who having heard by accident of her deplorable ſituation, had immediately obeyed the dictates of her humanity, and come in perſon to relieve her diſtreſs; that ſhe had not only generouſly ſupplied her with money for her preſent ſuſtenance, but alſo undertaken to provide a nurſe for her babes, and even promiſed to favour her with protection, ſhould ſhe ſurvive her preſent melancholy ſituation. To theſe articles of intelligence ſhe added, that the name of her benefactreſs was the celebrated Lady ——, to whoſe character the youth was no ſtranger, though he had never ſeen her perſon before. The killing edge of her charms was a little blunted by the accidents of time and fortune; but no man of taſte and imagination, whoſe nerves were not quite chilled with the froſt of age, could even at that time look upon her with impunity. And as Peregrine ſaw her attractions heightened by the tender office in which ſhe was engaged, he was ſmitten with her beauty, and ſo raviſhed with her compaſſion, that he could not ſuppreſs his emotions, but applauded her benevolence with all the warmth of enthuſiaſm.

Her ladyſhip received his compliments with great politeneſs and affability. And the occaſion on which they met being equally intereſting to both, an acquaintance commenced between them, and they concerted meaſures

meaſures for the benefit of the widow and her two children, one of whom our hero beſpoke for his own godſon; for Pickle was not ſo obſcure in the beau monde, but that his fame had reached the ears of this lady, who, therefore, did not diſcourage his advances towards her friendſhip and eſteem.

All the particulars relating to their charge being adjuſted, he attended her ladyſhip to her own houſe; and, by her converſation, had the pleaſure of finding her underſtanding ſuitable to her other accompliſhments. Nor had ſhe any reaſon to think, that our hero's qualifications had been exaggerated by common report.

One of their adopted children died before it was baptized; ſo that their care concentered in the other, for whom they ſtood ſponſors. Underſtanding that the old agent was become troubleſome in his viſits to the mother, to whom he now began to adminiſter ſuch counſel as ſhocked the delicacy of her virtue, they removed her into another lodging, where ſhe would not be expoſed to his machinations. In leſs than a month, our hero learned from a nobleman of his acquaintance, that the hoary pandar had actually engaged to procure for him this poor afflicted gentlewoman; and being fruſtrated in his intention, ſubſtituted in her room a nymph from the purlieus of Covent Garden, that made his lordſhip ſmart ſeverely for the favours ſhe beſtowed.

Meanwhile, Peregrine cultivated his new acquaintance with all his art and aſſiduity, preſuming, from the circumſtances of her reputation and fate, as well as on the ſtrength of his own merit, that, in time, he ſhould be able to indulge that paſſion which had begun to glow within his breaſt.

As her ladyſhip had undergone a vaſt variety of fortune and adventure, which he had heard indiſtinctly related, with numberleſs errors and miſrepreſentations, he was no ſooner entitled, by the familiarity of communication, to aſk ſuch a favour, than he earneſtly entreated her to entertain him with the particulars of her ſtory; and, by dint of importunity, ſhe was at length prevailed

prevailed upon (in a select *partie*) to gratify his curiosity in these words.

CHAP. IX.

The Memoirs of a Lady of Quality.

'BY the circumstances of the story which I am going to relate, you will be convinced of my candour, while you are informed of my indiscretion: you will be enabled, I hope, to perceive, that howsoever my head may have erred, my heart hath always been uncorrupted, and that I have been unhappy, *because I loved, and was a woman.*

'I believe I need not observe, that I was the only child of a man of good fortune, who indulged me in my infancy, with all the tenderness of paternal affection; and when I was six years old, sent me to a private school, where I stayed till my age was doubled, and became such a favourite, that I was (even in those early days) carried to all the places of publick diversion, the court itself not excepted; an indulgence that flattered my love of pleasure, to which I was naturally addicted, and encouraged those ideas of vanity and ambition which spring up so early in the human mind.

'I was lively and good-natured, my imagination apt to run riot, my heart liberal and disinterested; though I was so obstinately attached to my own opinions that I could not well brook contradiction; and in the whole of my disposition, resembled that of Henry the Fifth, as described by Shakspear.

'In my thirteenth year I went to Bath, where I was first introduced into the world as a woman, having been intitled to that privilege by my person, which was remarkably tall for my years; and there my fancy was quite captivated by the variety of diversions in which I was continually engaged: not that the parties were altogether new to me, but because I now found myself considered as a person of consequence, and surrounded by a crowd of admirers, who courted my acquaintance, and fed my vanity with praise and adulation. In short, whether or not I deserved their encomiums, I leave the world

world to judge; but my perſon was commended, and my talent in dancing met with univerſal applauſe. No wonder, then, that every thing appeared joyous to a young creature, who was ſo void of experience and diſſimulation, that ſhe believed every body's heart as ſincere as her own, and every object ſuch as it appeared to be.

'Among the ſwains who ſighed, or pretended to ſigh for me, were two that bore a pretty equal ſhare of my favour; (it was too ſuperficial to deſerve the name of love.) One of theſe was a forward youth of ſixteen, extremely handſome, lively, and impudent: he attended in quality of page upon the Princeſs Amelia, who ſpent that ſeaſon at Bath. The other was a Scotch nobleman, turned of thirty, who was graced with a red ribband, and danced particularly well; two qualifications of great weight with a girl of my age, whoſe heart was not deeply intereſted in the cauſe. Nevertheleſs, the page prevailed over this formidable rival; though our amour went no farther than a little flirting, and ceaſed entirely when I left the place.

'Next year, however, I reviſited this agreeable ſcene, and paſſed my time in the ſame circle of amuſements; in which, indeed, each ſeaſon at Bath is exactly reſembled by that which ſucceeds, allowing for the difference of company, which is continually varying. There I met with the ſame incenſe, and again had my favourite, who was a North Briton, and captain of foot, near forty years of age, and a little lame; an impediment which I did not diſcover, until it was pointed out by ſome of my companions, who rallied me upon my choice. He was always chearful, and very amorous; had a good countenance, and an excellent underſtanding; poſſeſſed a great deal of art, and would have perſuaded me to marry him, had I not been reſtrained by the authority of my father, whoſe conſent was to be obtained in favour of a man of his fortune.

'At the ſame time, many propoſals of marriage were made to my parents; but as they came from people

whom I did not like, I rejected them all; being determined to refuse every man who did not make his addresses to myself in person, because I had no notion of marrying for any thing but love.

'Among these formal proposers was a Scottish earl, whose pretensions were broke off by some difference about settlements; and the son of an English baron, with whom my father was in treaty, when he carried me to town, on a visit to a young lady, with whom I had been intimate from my infancy. She was just delivered of her first son, for whom we stood sponsors: so that this occasion detained us a whole month; during which, I went to a ball at court on the queen's birthday, and there, for the first time, felt what love and beauty were.

'The second son of Duke H——, who had just returned from his travels, was dancing with the princess-royal, when a young lady came and desired me to go and see a stranger, whom all the world admired: upon which I followed her into the circle, and observed this object of admiration. He was dressed in a coat of white cloth, faced with blue sattin embroidered with silver, of the same piece with his waistcoat; his fine hair hung down his back in ringlets below his waist, his hat was laced with silver, and garnished with a white feather; but his person beggared all description. He was tall and graceful, neither corpulent nor meagre; his limbs finely proportioned, his countenance open and majestick, his eyes full of sweetness and vivacity, his teeth regular, and his pouting lips of the complexion of the damask rose. In short, he was formed for love, and inspired it wherever he appeared; nor was he a niggard of his talents, but liberally returned it; at least, what passed for such; for he had a flow of gallantry, for which many ladies of this land can vouch from their own experience: but he exclaimed against marriage, because he had as yet met with no woman to whose charms he would surrender his liberty, though a prin-

cess

cess of France, and a lady of the same rank in ——, were said to be at that time enamoured with his person.

'I went home, totally ingrossed by his idea, flattering myself, that he had observed me with some attention; for I was young and new, and had the good fortune to attract the notice and approbation of the queen herself.

'Next day, being at the opera, I was agreeably surprized with the appearance of this amiable stranger, who no sooner saw me enter, than he approached so near to the place where I sat, that I overheard what he said to his companions; and was so happy as to find myself the object of his discourse, which abounded with rapturous expressions of love and admiration.

'I could not listen to these transports without emotion; my colour changed, my heart throbbed with unusual violence, and my eyes betrayed my inclination in sundry favourable glances, which he seemed to interpret aright, though he could not then avail himself of his success, so far as to communicate his sentiments by speech, because we were strangers to each other.

'I passed that night in the most anxious suspense, and several days elapsed before I saw him again. At length, however, being at court on a ball-night, and determined against dancing, I perceived him among the crowd; and, to my unspeakable joy, saw him advance with my Lord P——, who introduced him to my acquaintance. He soon found means to alter my resolution; and I condescended to be his partner all the evening; during which he declared his passion in the most tender and persuasive terms that real love could dictate, or fruitful imagination invent.

'I believed his protestations, because I wished them true, and was an unexperienced girl of fifteen. I complied with his request of being permitted to visit me, and even invited him to breakfast next morning; so that you may imagine (I speak to those that feel) I did not that night enjoy much repose. Such was the hurry and flutter of my spirits, that I rose at six to re-

ceive

ceive him at ten. I dressed myself in a new pink sattin gown, and my best laced night-cloaths, and was so animated by the occasion, that if ever I deserved a compliment upon my looks, it was my due at this meeting.

'The wished-for moment came that brought my lover to my view; I was overwhelmed with joy, modesty, and fear of I knew not what. We sat down to breakfast, but did not eat. He renewed his addresses with irresistible eloquence, and pressed me to accept of his hand without further hesitation; but to such a precipitate step I objected, as a measure repugnant to decency, as well as to that duty which I owed my father, whom I tenderly loved.

'Though I withstood this premature proposal, I did not attempt to disguise the situation of my thoughts; and thus commenced a tender correspondence, which was maintained by letters while I remained in the country, and carried on, when I was in town, by private interviews, twice or thrice a week, at the house of my milliner, where such endearments passed as refined and happy lovers know, and others can only guess. Truth and innocence prevailed on my side, while his heart was fraught with sincerity and love. Such frequent intercourse created an intimacy which I began to think dangerous, and therefore yielded to his repeated desire that we might be united for ever; nay, I resolved to avoid him until the day should be fixed, and very innocently (though not very wisely) told him my reason for this determination, which was no other than a consciousness of my incapacity to refuse him any thing he should demand as a testimony of my love.

'The time was accordingly appointed, at the distance of a few days, during which I intended to have implored my father's consent, though I had but faint hopes of obtaining it; but he was by some means or other apprized of our design, before I could prevail upon myself to make him acquainted with our purpose. I had danced with my lover at the Ridotto on the preceding evening, and there, perhaps, our eyes betrayed

us.

us. Certain it is, ſeveral of Lord W——m's relations, who diſapproved of the match, came up and rallied him on his paſſions; Lord S——k in particular uſed this remarkable expreſſion; "Nephew, as much love as you pleaſe, but no matrimony."

'Next day, the prieſt being prepared, and the bridegroom waiting for me at the appointed place, in all the tranſports of impatient expectation, I was, without any previous warning, carried into the country by my father, who took no notice of the intelligence he had received, but decoyed me into the coach on pretence of taking the air: and when we had proceeded as far as Turnham Green, gave me to underſtand that he would dine in that place.

'There was no remedy: I was obliged to bear my diſappointment, though with an aching heart, and followed him up ſtairs into an apartment, where he told me he was minutely informed of my matrimonial ſcheme. I did not attempt to diſguiſe the truth, but aſſured him, while tears guſhed from my eyes, that my want of courage alone had hindered me from making him privy to my paſſion: though I owned, I ſhould have married Lord W——m, even though he had diſapproved of my choice. I reminded him of the uneaſy life I led at home, and frankly acknowledged, that I loved my admirer too well to live without him; though if he would favour me with his conſent, I would defer my intention, and punctually obſerve any day he would fix for our nuptials. Meanwhile, I begged he would permit me to ſend a meſſage to Lord W——m, who was waiting in expectation of my coming, and might without ſuch notice imagine I was playing the jilt. He granted this laſt requeſt; in conſequence of which I ſent a letter to my lover, who, when he received it, had almoſt fainted away, believing I ſhould be locked up in the country, and ſnatched for ever from his arms. Tortured with theſe apprehenſions, he changed cloaths immediately, and taking horſe, reſolved to follow me whitherſoever we ſhould go.

'After dinner we proceeded as far as Brentford, where we lay, intending to be at my father's country houſe next night; and my admirer putting up at the ſame inn, practiſed every expedient his invention could ſuggeſt to procure an interview; but all his endeavours were unſucceſsful, becauſe I, who little dreamed of his being ſo near, had gone to bed upon our firſt arrival, overwhelmed with affliction and tears.

'In the morning I threw myſelf at my father's feet, and conjured him by all the ties of paternal affection, to indulge me with an opportunity of ſeeing my admirer once more, before I ſhould be conveyed from his wiſhes. The melancholy condition in which I preferred this ſupplication, melted the tender heart of my parent, who yielded to my ſolicitations, and carried me back to town for that purpoſe.

'Lord W——m, who had watched our motions, and arrived at his own lodgings before we arrived at my father's houſe, obeyed my ſummons on the inſtant, and appeared before me like an angel. Our faculties were, for ſome minutes, ſuſpended by a conflict of grief and joy. At length, I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and gave him to underſtand, that I was come to town in order to take my leave of him, by the permiſſion of my father, whom I had promiſed to attend into the country next day, before he would conſent to my return; the chief cauſe and pretence of which, was my earneſt deſire to convince him, that I was not to blame for the diſappointment he had ſuffered, and that I ſhould ſee him again in a month, when the nuptial knot ſhould be tied in ſpite of all oppoſition.

'My lover, who was better acquainted with the world, had well nigh run diſtracted with this information. He ſwore he would not leave me, until I ſhould promiſe to meet and marry him next day; or, if I refuſed to grant that requeſt, he would immediately leave the kingdom, to which he would never more return; and before his departure, ſacrifice Lord H—B—, ſon to the Duke of S. A——, who was the only perſon

ſon upon earth who could have betrayed us to my father, becauſe he alone was truſted with the ſecret of our intended marriage, and had actually undertaken to give me away; an office which he afterwards declined. Lord W——m alſo affirmed, that my father decoyed me into the country, with a view of cooping me up, and ſequeſtering me entirely from his view and correſpondance.

'In vain I pleaded my father's well-known tenderneſs, and uſed all the arguments I could recollect to divert him from his revenge upon Lord H——. He was deaf to all my repreſentations, and nothing, I found, would prevail upon him to ſuppreſs his reſentment, but a poſitive promiſe to comply with his former deſire. I told him I would hazard every thing to make him happy; but could not, with any regard to my duty, take ſuch a ſtep without the knowledge of my parent; or, if I were ſo inclined, it would be impracticable to elude his vigilance and ſuſpicion. However, he employed ſuch pathetick remonſtrances and retained ſuch a powerful advocate within my own breaſt, that before we parted I aſſured him, my whole power ſhould be exerted for his ſatisfaction; and he ſignified his reſolution of ſitting up all night, in expectation of ſeeing me at his lodgings.

'He had no ſooner retired, than I went into the next room, and deſired my father to fix a day for the marriage; in which caſe, I would chearfully wait upon him into the country; whereas, ſhould he deny my requeſt, on pretence of ſtaying for the conſent of my mother's relations, which was very uncertain, I would ſeize the firſt opportunity of marrying Lord W——m, coſt what it would. He conſented to the match, but would not appoint a day for the ceremony, which he propoſed to defer until all parties ſhould be agreed; and ſuch a favourable criſis, I feared, would never happen.

'I therefore reſolved within myſelf to gratify my lover's expectation, by eloping, if poſſible, that very night; though the execution of this plan was ex-

tremely difficult, becaufe my father was upon the alarm, and my own maid, who was my bedfellow, altogether in his intereft. Notwithftanding thefe confiderations, I found means to engage one of the houfe-maids in my behalf, who befpoke an hackney-coach, to be kept in waiting all night: and to bed I went with my Abigail, whom, as I had not clofed an eye, I waked about five in the morning, and fent to pack up fome things for our intended journey.

'While fhe was thus employed, I got up, and huddled on my cloaths, ftanding upon my pillow, left my father, who lay in the chamber below, fhould hear me a-foot, and fufpect my defign.

'Having dreffed myfelf with great difpatch and diforder, I flounced down ftairs, ftalking as heavily as I could tread, that he might miftake me for one of the fervants: and my confederate opening the door, I fallied out into the ftreet, though I knew not which way to turn: and, to my unfpeakable mortification, neither coach nor chair appeared.

'Having travelled on foot a good way, in hope of finding a convenience, and being not only difappointed in that particular, but alfo bewildered in my peregrination, I began to be exceedingly alarmed with the apprehenfion of being met by fome perfon who might know me; becaufe, in that cafe, my defign would undoubtedly have been difcovered, from every circumftance of my appearance at that time of day, for I had put on the very cloaths which I had pulled off over night, fo that my drefs was altogether odd and peculiar; my fhoes were very fine, and over a large hoop I wore a pink fattin quilted petticoat trimmed with filver, which was partly covered by a white dimity night-gown, a full quarter of a yard too fhort; my handkerchief and apron were hurried on without pinning; my night-cap could not contain my hair, which hung about my ears in great diforder; and my countenance denoted a mixture of hope and fear, joy and fhame.

'In this dilemma, I made my addreffes to that honourable

nourable member of ſociety, a ſhoe black, whom I earneſtly intreated to provide me with a coach or chair, promiſing to reward him liberally for his trouble; but he having the misfortune to be lame, was unable to keep up with my pace; ſo that, by his advice and direction, I went into the firſt publick-houſe I found open, where I ſtayed ſome time, in the utmoſt conſternation, among a crew of wretches whom I thought proper to bribe for their civility, not without the terror of being ſtripped. At length, however, my meſſenger returned with a chair, of which I took immediate poſſeſſion; and fearing that, by this time, my family would be alarmed, and ſend directly to Lord W——m's lodgings, I ordered myſelf to be carried thither backwards, that ſo I might paſs undiſcovered.

'This ſtratagem ſucceeded according to my wiſh; I ran up ſtairs, in a ſtate of trepidation, to my faithful lover, who waited for me with the moſt impatient and fearful ſuſpenſe. At ſight of me his eyes lightened with tranſport; he caught me in his arms, as the richeſt preſent Heaven could beſtow; gave me to underſtand that my father had already ſent to his lodgings in queſt of me; then applauding my love and reſolution in the moſt rapturous terms, he ordered a hackney-coach to be called, and that we might run no riſk of ſeparation, attended me to church, where we were lawfully joined in the ſight of Heaven.

'His fears were then all over, but mine recurred with double aggravation. I dreaded the ſight of my father, and ſhared all the ſorrow he ſuffered on account of my undutiful behaviour; for I loved him with ſuch piety of affection, that I would have endured every other ſpecies of diſtreſs, rather than have given him the leaſt uneaſineſs: but love (where he reigns in full empire) is altogether irreſiſtible, ſurmounts every difficulty, and ſwallows up all other conſiderations. This was the caſe with me; and now the irrevocable ſtep was taken, my firſt care was to avoid his ſight. With this view, I begged that Lord W——m would think of

of ſome remote place in the country, to which we might retire for the preſent: and he forthwith conducted me to a houſe on Blackheath, where we were very civilly received by a laughter-loving dame, who ſeemed to miſtake me for one of her own ſiſterhood.

'I no ſooner perceived her opinion, than I deſired Lord W——m to undeceive her; upon which ſhe was acquainted with the nature of my ſituation, and ſhewed us into a private room, where I called for pen and paper, and wrote an apology to my father, for having acted contrary to his will in ſo important a concern.

'This taſk being performed, the bridegroom gave me to underſtand, that there was a neceſſity for our being bedded immediately, in order to render the marriage binding, leſt my father ſhould diſcover and part us before conſummation. I pleaded hard for a reſpite till the evening, objecting to the indecency of going to bed before noon; but he found means to invalidate all my arguments; and to convince me that it was now my duty to obey. Rather than hazard the imputation of being obſtinate and refractory on the firſt day of my probation, I ſuffered myſelf to be led into a chamber, which was darkened by my expreſs ſtipulation, that my ſhame and confuſion might be the better concealed, and yielded to the privilege of a dear huſband, who loved me to adoration.

'About five o'clock in the afternoon we were called to dinner, which we had ordered to be ready at four; but ſuch a paltry care had been forgot, amidſt the tranſports of our mutual bliſs. We got up, however; and when we came down ſtairs, I was aſhamed to ſee the light of day, or meet the eyes of my beloved lord. I ate little, ſaid leſs, was happy, though overwhelmed with confuſion; underwent a thouſan agitations, ſome of which were painful, but by far the greater part belonged to rapture and delight; we were emparadiſed in the gratification of our mutual wiſhes, and felt all that love can beſtow, and ſenſibility can enjoy.

'In the twilight we returned to Lord W——m's

lodgings

lodgings in town, where I received a letter from my father, importing, that he would never see me again. But there was one circumstance in his manner of writing, from which I conceived a happy presage of his future indulgence. He had begun with his usual appellation of *Dear Fanny*, which though it was expunged to make way for the word *Madam*, encouraged me to hope that his paternal fondness was not yet extinguished.

'At supper we were visited by Lord W——m's younger sister, who laughed at us for our inconsiderate match, though she owned, she envied our happiness, and offered me the use of her cloaths, until I could retrieve my own. She was a woman of a great deal of humour, plain but genteel, civil, friendly, and perfectly well bred. She favoured us with her company till the night was pretty far advanced, and did not take her leave till we retired to our apartment.

'As our lodgings were not spacious or magnificent, we resolved to see little company; but this resolution was frustrated by the numerous acquaintance of Lord W——m, who let in half the town; so that I run the gauntlet for a whole week among a set of wits, who always delight in teazing a young creature of any note, when she happens to make such a stolen match. Among those that visited us upon this occasion, was my lord's younger brother, who was at that time in keeping with a rich heiress of masculine memory, and took that opportunity of making a parade with his equipage, which was indeed very magnificent, but altogether disregarded by us, whose happiness consisted in the opulence of mutual love.

'This ceremony of receiving visits being performed, we went to wait on his mother the Duchess of H——, who hearing I was an heiress, readily forgave her son for marrying without her knowledge and consent, and favoured us with a very cordial reception; insomuch, that, for several months, we dined almost constantly at her table; and I must own, I always found her unaltered in her civility and affection, con-

trary to her general character, which was haughty and capricious. She was undoubtedly a woman of great ſpirit and underſtanding, but ſubject to an infirmity which very much impairs and diſguiſes every other qualification.

'In about three weeks after our marriage, I was ſo happy as to obtain the forgiveneſs of my father, to whoſe houſe we repaired, in order to pay our reſpects and ſubmiſſion. At ſight of me he wept; nor did I behold his tears unmoved: my heart was overcharged with tenderneſs and ſorrow, for having offended ſuch an indulgent parent; ſo that I mingled my tears with his; while my dear huſband, whoſe ſoul was of the ſofteſt and gentleſt mould, melted with ſympathy at the affecting ſcene.

'Being thus reconciled to my father, we attended him into the country, where we were received by my mother, who was a ſenſible good woman, though not ſuſceptible to love, and therefore leſs apt to excuſe a weakneſs to which ſhe was an utter ſtranger. This was likewiſe the caſe with an uncle, from whom I had great expectations. He was a plain good-natured man, and treated us with great courteſy; though his motions, in point of love, were not exactly conformable to ours. Neverthleſs, I was, and ſeemed to be ſo happy in my choice, that my family not only became ſatisfied with the match, but exceedingly fond of Lord W——m.

'After a ſhort ſtay with them in the country, we returned to London, in order to be introduced at court, and then ſet out for the North, on a viſit to my brother-in-law the Duke of H——, who had, by a letter to Lord W——m, invited us to his habituation. My father accordingly equipped us with horſes and money; for our own finances were extremely ſlender, conſiſting only of a ſmall penſion allowed by his grace, upon whom the brothers were entirely dependent, the father h ving died ſuddenly, before ſuitable proviſion could be made for his younger children.

'When

'When I took my leave of my relations, bidding adieu to my paternal home, and found myſelf launching into a world of care and trouble, though the voyage on which I had embarked was altogether voluntary, and my companion the perſon on whom I doated to diſtraction, I could not help feeling ſome melancholy ſenſations: which, however, in a little time, gave way to a train of more agreeable ideas. I was viſited in town by almoſt all the women of faſhion, many of whom, I perceived, envied me the poſſeſſion of a man who had made ſtrange havock among their hearts, and ſome of them knew the value of his favour. One in particular endeavoured to cultivate my friendſhip with ſingular marks of regard; but I thought proper to diſcourage her advances, by keeping within the bounds of bare civility; and indeed, to none of them was I laviſh of my complaiſance, for I dedicated my whole time to the object of my affection, who engroſſed my wiſhes to ſuch a degree, that although I was never jealous, (becauſe I had no reaſon to be ſo) I envied the happineſs of every woman whom he chanced at any time to hand into a coach.

'The Ducheſs of ——, who was newly married to the Earl of P——, a particular friend of Lord W—m's, carried me to court, and preſented me to the queen, who expreſſed her approbation of my perſon in very particular terms, and obſerved the ſatisfaction that appeared in my countenance, with marks of admiration; deſired her ladies to take notice, how little happineſs depended upon wealth, ſince there was more joy in my face than in all her court beſides.

'Such a declaration could not fail to overwhelm me with bluſhes, which her majeſty ſeemed to behold with pleaſure; for ſhe frequently repeated the remark, and ſhewed me to all the foreigners of diſtinction, with many gracious expreſſions of favour. She wiſhed Lord W——m happineſs inſtead of joy: and was pleaſed to promiſe that ſhe would provide for her pretty beggars; and poor enough we certainly were in every article but

love.

love. Neverthelefs we felt no neceffities, but paffed the fummer in a variety of pleafures and parties; the greateft part of which were planned by Lord W—'s fifter and another lady, who was at that time miftrefs to the prime minifter. The firft was a wit, but homely in her perfon, the other, a woman of great beauty and mafculine underftanding; and a particular friendfhip fubfifted between them, though they were both lovers of power and admiration.

'This lady, who fat at the helm, was extremely elegant as well as expenfive in her diverfions, in many of which we bore a fhare; particularly her parties upon the water, which were contrived in all the magnificence of tafte. In the courfe of thefe amufements, a trifling circumftance occurred, which I fhall relate as an inftance of that jealous fenfibility which characterized Lord W——m's difpofition. A large company of ladies and gentlemen having agreed to dine at Vauxhall, and fup at Marble Hall, where we propofed to conclude the evening with a dance, one barge being infufficient to contain the whole company, we were divided by lots; in confequence of which, my hufband and I were parted. The feparation was equally mortifying to us both, who, though married, were ftill lovers; and my chagrin was increafed, when I perceived that I was doomed to fit by Sir W—— Y——, a man of profeffed gallantry; for, although Lord W——m had, before his marriage, made his addreffes to every woman he faw, I knew very well he did not defire that any perfon fhould make love to his wife.

'That I might not therefore give umbrage, by talking to this gallant, I converfed with a Scots nobleman, who, according to common report, had formerly fighed among my admirers, by thefe means, in feeking to avoid one error, I unwittingly plunged myfelf into a greater; and difobliged Lord W——m fo much, that he could not conceal his difpleafure; nay, fo deeply was he offended at my conduct, that in the evening, when the ball began, he would fcarce deign to take me

by

by the hand in the course of dancing, and darted such unkind looks as pierced me to the very soul. What augmented my concern, was my ignorance of the trespass I had committed. I was tortured with a thousand uneasy reflections; I began to fear that I had mistaken his temper, and given my heart to a man who was tired of possession; though I resolved to bear without complaining the misfortune I had entailed upon myself.

'I seized the first opportunity of speaking to him, and thereby discovered the cause of his chagrin; but, as there was no time for expostulation, the misunderstanding continued on his side, with such evident marks of uneasiness, that every individual of the company made up to me, and enquired about the cause of his disorder; so that I was fain to amuse their concern by saying that he had been ill the day before, and dancing did not agree with his constitution. So much was he incensed by this unhappy circumstance of my conduct, which was void of all intention to offend him, that he determined to be revenged of me for my indiscretion; and, at supper, chancing to sit between two very handsome ladies (one of whom is lately dead, and the other, at present, my neighbour in the country) he affected an air of gaiety, and openly coquetted with them both.

'This was not the only punishment he inflicted on his innocent wife. In the course of our entertainment, we engaged in some simple diversion, in consequence of which the gentlemen were ordered to salute the ladies; when Lord W——, in performing this command, unkindly neglected me in my turn; and I had occasion for all my discretion and pride, to conceal from the company the agonies I felt at this mark of indifference and disrespect. However, I obtained the victory over myself, and pretended to laugh at his husband-like behaviour, while the tears stood in my eyes, and my heart swelled even to bursting.

'We broke up about five, after having spent the most tedious evening I had ever known; and this offended lover went to bed in a state of sullen silence and disgust.

disgust. Whatever desire I had to come to an explanation, I thought myself so much aggrieved by his unreasonable prejudice, that I could not prevail upon myself to demand a conference, till after his first nap, when my pride giving way to my tenderness, I clasped him in my arms, though he pretended to discourage these advances of my love: I asked how he could be so unjust as to take umbrage at my civility to a man whom he knew I had refused for his sake. I chid him for his barbarous endeavours to awake my jealousy, and used such irresistible arguments in my own vindication, that he was convinced of my innocence, sealed my acquital with a kind embrace, and we mutually enjoyed the soft transports of a fond reconciliation.

'Never was passion more eager, delicate or unreserved, than that which glowed within our breasts. Far from being cloyed with the possession of each other, our raptures seemed to increase with the term of our union. When we were parted, though but for a few hours, by the necessary avocations of life, we were unhappy during that brief separation, and met again, like lovers who know no joy but in one another's presence. How many delicious evenings did we spend together, in our little apartment, after we had ordered the candles to be taken away, that we might enjoy the agreeable reflection of the moon in a fine summer's evening. Such a mild and solemn scene naturally disposes the mind to peace and benevolence; but when improved with the conversation of the man one loves, it fills the imagination with ideas of ineffable delight! For my own part, I can safely say, my heart was so wholly engrossed by my husband, that I never took pleasure in any diversion where he was not personally concerned; nor was I ever guilty of one thought repugnant to my duty and my love.

'In the autumn we set out for the North, and were met on the rode by the duke and twenty gentlemen, who conducted us to H——n, where we lived in all imaginable splendour. His grace, at that time, maintained

maintained above an hundred servants, with a band of musick, which always performed at dinner; kept open table, and was visited by a great deal of company. The œconomy of his house was superintended by his eldest sister, a beautiful young lady of an amiable temper, with whom I soon contracted an intimate friendship. She and the duke used to rally me upon my fondness for Lord W——m, who was a sort of an humourist, and apt to be in a pet, in which case he would leave the company, and go to bed by seven o'clock in the evening. On these occasions, I always disappeared, giving up every consideration to that of pleasing my husband, notwithstanding the ridicule of his relations, who taxed me with having spoiled him with too much indulgence. But how could I express too much tenderness and condescension, for a man who doated upon me to such excess, that when business obliged him to leave me, he always snatched the first opportunity to return, and often rode through darkness, storms, and tempests, to my arms!

'Having stayed about seven months in this place, I found myself in a fair way of being a mother; and that I might be near my own relations, in such an interesting situation, I and my dear companion departed from H——n, not without great reluctance; for I was fond of the Scots in general, who treated me with great hospitality and respect; and to this day, they pay me the compliment of saying, I was one of the best wives in that country, which is so justly celebrated for good women.

'Lord W——m having attended me to my father's house, was obliged to return to Scotland to support his interest in being elected member of parliament; so that he took his leave of me, with a full resolution of seeing me again, before the time of my lying-in; and all the comfort I enjoyed in his absence, was the perusal of his letters, which I punctually received, together with those of his sister, who from time to time favoured me with assurances of his constancy and devotion. Indeed these

teſtimonials were neceſſary to one of my diſpoſition; for I was none of thoſe who could be contented with half an heart. I could not even ſpare one complacent look to any other woman, but expected the undivided homage of his love. Had I been diſappointed in this expectation, I ſhould, (though a wife) have rebelled or died.

'Meanwhile my parents treated me with great tenderneſs, intending that Lord W——m ſhould be ſettled in a houſe of his own, and accommodated with my fortune, and his expectations from the queen were very ſanguine, when I was taken ill, and delivered of a dead child; an event which affected me extremely. When I underſtood the extent of my misfortune, my heart throbbed with ſuch violence, that my breaſt could ſcarce contain it; and my anxiety being aggravated by the abſence of my lord, produced a dangerous fever, of which he was no ſooner apprized by letter, than he came poſt from Scotland; but before his arrival, I was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way.

'During this journey, he was tortured with all that terrible ſuſpenſe, which prevails in the minds of thoſe who are in danger of loſing that which is moſt dear to them; and when he entered the houſe, was ſo much overwhelmed with apprehenſion, that he durſt not enquire about the ſtate of my health.

'As for my part, I never cloſed an eye from the time on which I expected his return; and when I heard his voice, I threw open my curtains, and ſat up in the bed to receive him, though at the hazard of my life. He run towards me with all the eagerneſs of paſſion, and claſped me in his arms; he kneeled by the bed ſide, kiſſed my hand a thouſand times, and wept with tranſports of tenderneſs and joy. In ſhort, this meeting was ſo pathetick, as to overcome my enfeebled conſtitution; and we were parted by thoſe who were wiſer than ourſelves, and ſaw nothing was ſo proper for us as a little repoſe.

'But how ſhall I relate the deplorable tranſition

from

from envied happineſs to exceſs of miſery, which I now ſuſtained! My month was hardly up, when my dear huſband was taken ill; perhaps the fatigue of body as well as of mind, which he had undergone on my account, occaſioned a fatal ferment in his blood, and his health fell a ſacrifice to his love. Phyſicians were called from London; but, alas! they brought no hopes of his recovery. By their advice, he was removed to town, for the convenience of being punctually attended. Every moment was too precious to be thrown away; he was therefore immediately put into the coach, though the day was far ſpent; and I, though exceedingly weak, accompanied him in the journey, which was performed by the light of flambeaus, and rendered unſpeakably ſhocking, by the diſmal apprehenſion of loſing him every moment.

'At length, however, we arrived at our lodgings in Pall Mall, where I lay by him on the floor, and attended the iſſue of his diſtemper, in all the agonies of horror and deſpair. In a little time his malady ſettled upon his brain, and in his delirium, he uttered ſuch dreadful exclamations, as were ſufficient to pierce the moſt ſavage heart. What effect then muſt they have had on mine, which was fraught with every ſentiment of the moſt melting affection! It was not a common grief that took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; I felt all the aggravation of the moſt acute diſtreſs. I ſometimes ran down to the ſtreet in a fit of diſtraction; I ſent for the doctors every minute; I wearied Heaven with my prayers: even now my heart aches at the remembrance of what I ſuffered, and I cannot without trembling proceed with the woeful ſtory.

'After having lain inſenſible ſome days, he recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and called upon my name, which he had a thouſand times repeated while he was bereft of reaſon. All hope of his life was now relinquiſhed, and I was led to his bed-ſide to receive his laſt adieu, being directed to ſummon all my fortitude, and ſuppreſs my ſorrow, that he might not be diſturbed by my

 agitation.

agitation. I collected all my resolution to support me in this affecting scene. I saw my dear lord in extremity. The beauties of his youth were all decayed; yet his eyes, though languid, retained unspeakable sweetness and expression. He felt his end approaching, put forth his hand, and with a look full of complacency and benevolence, uttered such a tender tale——Good Heaven! how had I deserved such accumulated affliction! the bare remembrance of which now melts me into tears! Human nature could not undergo my situation, without suffering an extasy of grief! I clasped him in my arms, and kissed him a thousand times, with the most violent emotions of woe; but I was torn from his embrace, and in a little time he was ravished for ever from my view.

'On that fatal morning, which put a period to his life, I saw the Duchess of L—— approach my bed, and, from her appearance, concluded that he was no more; yet I begged she would not confirm the unhappy presage, by announcing his death; and she accordingly preserved the most emphatick silence. I got up, and trod softly over his head, as if I had been afraid of interrupting his repose. Alas! he was no longer sensible of such disturbance. I was seized with a stupefaction of sorrow: I threw up the window, and looking around, thought the sun shone with the most dismal aspect; every thing was solitary, chearless, and replete with horror.

'In this condition I was, by the direction of my friend, conveyed to her house, where my faculties were so overpowered by the load of anguish which oppressed me, that I know not what passed during the first days of my unhappy widowhood; this only I know, the kind duchess treated me with all imaginable care and compassion, and carried me to her country-house, where I stayed some months; during which, she endeavoured to comfort me with all the amusements she could invent, and laid me under such obligations, as shall never be erased from my remembrance; yet, notwithstanding all her care and concern, I was, by my excess of grief,

plunged into a languiſhing diſtemper, for which my phyſicians adviſed me to drink the Bath waters.

'In compliance with this preſcription, I went thither towards the end of ſummer, and found ſome benefit by adhering to their directions; though I ſeldom went abroad, except when I viſited my ſiſter-in-law, who was there with the princeſs; and upon theſe occaſions, I never failed to attract the notice of the company, who were ſtruck with the appearance of ſuch a young creature in weeds. Nor was I free from the perſecution of profeſſed admirers; but being dead to all joy, I was deaf to the voice of adulation.

'About Chriſtmas, I repaired to my father's houſe, where my ſorrows were revived by every object that recalled the idea of my dear lamented lord. But theſe melancholy reflections I was obliged to bear, becauſe I had no other home or habitation, being left an unprovided widow, altogether dependent on the affection of my own family.

'During this winter, divers overtures were made to my father, by people who demanded me in marriage; but my heart was not yet ſufficiently weaned from my former paſſion, to admit the thoughts of another maſter. Among thoſe that preſented their propoſals, was a certain young nobleman, who, upon the firſt news of Lord W——m's death, came poſt from Paris, in order to declare his paſſion. He made his firſt appearance in a hired chariot and ſix, accompanied by a big fat fellow, whom (as I afterwards learned) he had engaged to ſound his praiſes, with the promiſe of a thouſand pounds, in lieu of which he paid him with forty. Whether it was with a view of ſcreening himſelf from the cold, or of making a comfortable medium in caſe of being overturned, and falling under his weighty companion, I know not; but certain it is, the carriage was ſtuffed with hay, in ſuch a manner, that when he arrived, the ſervants were at ſome pains in rummaging and removing it, before they could come at their maſter, or help him to alight. When he was lifted out of

the chariot, he exhibited a very ludicrous figure to the view; he was a thin, meagre, ſhivering creature, of a low ſtature, with little black eyes, a long noſe, ſallow complexion, and pitted with the ſmall-pox; dreſſed in a coat of light brown frieze lined with pink-coloured ſhag, a monſtrous ſolitaire and bag, and (if I remember aright) a pair of huge jack-boots. In a word, his whole appearance was ſo little calculated for inſpiring love, that I had (on the ſtrength of ſeeing him once before at Oxford) ſet him down as the laſt man on earth whom I would chuſe to wed; and I will venture to affirm, that he was in every particular the very reverſe of my late huſband.

'As my father was not at home, he ſtayed but one evening, and left his errand with my mother, to whom he was as diſagreeable as to myſelf; ſo that his propoſal was abſolutely rejected; and I heard no more of him during the ſpace of three whole months; at the expiration of which I went to town, where this mortifying figure preſented itſelf again, and renewed his ſuit, offering ſuch advantageous terms of ſettlement, that my father began to reliſh the match, and warmly recommended it to my conſideration.

'Lord W——m's relations adviſed me to embrace the opportunity of making myſelf independent; all my acquaintance plied me with arguments to the ſame purpoſe: I was uneaſy at home, and indifferent to all mankind. I weighed the motives with the objections, and with reluctance yielded to the importunity of my friends.

'In conſequence of this determination, the little gentleman was permitted to viſit me; and the manner of his addreſs did not at all alter the opinion I had conceived of his character and underſtanding. I was even ſhocked at the proſpect of marrying a man whom I could not love; and, in order to diſburben my own conſcience, took an opportunity of telling him one evening, as we ſat oppoſite to each other, that it was not in my power to command my affection, and therefore

fore he could not expect the possession of my heart, Lord W——m's indulgence having spoiled me for a wife; nevertheless, I would endeavour to contract a friendship for him, which would entirely depend upon his own behaviour.

'To this declaration he replied (to my great surprize) that he did not desire me to love him, my friendship was sufficient; and next day repeated this strange instance of moderation in a letter, which I communicated to my sister, who laughed heartily at the contents, and persuaded me, that since I could love no man, he was the properest person to be my husband.

'Accordingly, the wedding-cloaths, and equipage being prepared, the day—*the fatal day was fixed!* on the morning of which I went to the house of my brother-in-law, Duke H——, who loved me tenderly, and took my leave of the family; a family which I shall always remember with love, honour, and esteem. His grace received me in the most affectionate manner, saying, at parting, "Lady W——, if he does not use you well, I will take you back again."

'The bridegroom and I met at Ox—— Chapel, where the ceremony was performed by the Bishop of W——, in presence of his lordship's mother, my father, and another lady. The nuptial-knot being tied, we set out for my father's house in the country, and proceeded full twenty miles on our journey, before my lord opened his mouth; my thoughts having been all that time employed on something quite foreign to my present situation; for I was then but a giddy girl of eighteen. At length my father broke silence, and clapping his lordship on the shoulder, told him he was but a dull bridegroom; upon which, my lord gave him to understand, that he was out of spirits. This dejection continued all the day, notwithstanding the refreshment of a plentiful dinner, which he ate upon the road; and in the evening we arrived at the place of our destination, where we were kindly received by my mother, though

she,

ſhe had no liking to the match; and after ſupper, we retired to our apartment.

'It was here that I had occaſion to perceive the moſt diſagreeable contraſt between my preſent help-mate and my former lord. Inſtead of flying to my arms with all the eagerneſs of love and rapture, this manly repreſentative ſat moping in a corner, like a criminal on execution-day, and owned he was aſhamed to bed a woman, whoſe hand he had ſcarce ever touched.

'I could not help being affected with this puſillanimous behaviour; I remembered Lord W——m, while I ſurveyed the object before me, and made ſuch a compariſon as filled me with horror and diſguſt: nay, to ſuch a degree did my averſion to this phantom prevail, that I began to ſweat with anguiſh at the thought of being ſubjected to his pleaſure: and when, after a long heſitation, he ventured to approach me, I trembled as if I had been expoſed to the embraces of a rattle-ſnake. Nor did the efforts of his love diminiſh this antipathy. His attempts were like the pawings of an imp, ſent from hell to ſeize and torment ſome guilty wretch, ſuch as are exhibited in ſome dramatick performance, which I never ſee acted without remembering my wedding-night. By ſuch ſhadowy, unſubſtantial vexatious behaviour, was I tantalized and robbed of my repoſe; and early next morning I got up, with a moſt ſovereign contempt for my bed-fellow, who indulged himſelf in bed till eleven.

'Having paſſed a few days in this place, I went home with him to his houſe at Twickenham; and ſoon after we were preſented at court, when the queen was pleaſed to ſay to my lord's mother, ſhe did not doubt but we ſhould be an happy couple, for I had been a good wife to my former huſband.

'Whatever deficiencies I had to complain of in my new ſpouſe, he was not wanting in point of liberality: I was preſented with a very fine chariot ſtudded with ſilver nails, and ſuch a profuſion of jewels as furniſhed a joke to ſome of my acquaintance, who obſerved that

I was

I was formerly Queen of Hearts, but now metamorphosed into the Queen of Diamonds. I now also had an opportunity (which I did not let slip) of paying Lord W——m's debts from my privy purse: and on that score received the thanks of his elder brother, who (though he had undertaken to discharge them) delayed the execution of his purpose longer than I thought they should remain unpaid. This uncommon splendor attracted the eyes and envy of my competitors, who were the more implacable in their resentments, because, notwithstanding my marriage, I was as much as ever followed by the men of gallantry and pleasure, among whom it is a constant maxim, that a woman never witholds her affections from her husband without an intention to bestow them somewhere else. I never appeared without a train of admirers, and my house in the country was always crouded with gay young men of quality.

'Among those who cultivated my good graces with the greatest skill and assiduity, were the Earl C——, and Mr. S——, brother to Lord F——. The former of whom, in the course of his addresses, treated me with an entertainment of surprizing magnificence, disposed into a dinner, supper, and ball; to which I, at his desire, invited eleven ladies, whom he paired with the like number of his own sex; so that the whole company amounted to twenty-four. We were regaled with a most elegant dinner, in an apartment which was altogether superb, and served by gentlemen only, no livery servant being permitted to come within the door. In the afternoon we embarked in two splendid barges, being attended by a band of musick in a third; and enjoyed a delightful evening upon the river, till the twilight, when we returned and began the ball, which was conducted with such order and taste, that mirth and good-humour prevailed. No dissatisfaction appeared, except in the countenance of one old maid, since married to a son of the Duke of ——, who though she would not refuse to partake of such an agreeable entertainment,

tainment, was displeased that I should have the honour of inviting her. O baleful Envy! thou self-tormenting fiend! How dost thou predominate in all assemblies, from the grand gala of a court to the meeting of simple peasants at their harvest-home! Nor is the prevalence of this sordid passion to be wondered at, if we consider the weakness, pride, and vanity of our sex. The presence of one favourite man shall poison the enjoyment of a whole company, and produce the most rancorous enmity betwixt the closest friends.

'I danced with the master of the ball, who employed all the artillery of his eloquence in making love; yet I did not listen to his addresses, for he was not to my taste, though he possessed an agreeable person, and a good acquired understanding; but he was utterly ignorant of that gentle prevailing art which I afterwards experienced in Mr. S——, and which was the only method he could have successfully practised, in seducing a young woman like me, born with sentiments of honour, and trained up in the paths of religion and virtue. This young gentleman was, indeed, absolutely master of those insinuating qualifications which few women of passion and sensibility can resist; and had a person every way adapted for profiting by these insiduous talents. He was well acquainted with the human heart, conscious of his own power and capacity, and exercised these endowments with unwearied perseverance. He was tall and thin, of a shape and size perfectly agreeable to my taste, with large blue eloquent eyes, good teeth, and a long head turned to gallantry. His behaviour was the standard of politeness, and all his advances were conducted with the most profound respect; which is the most effectual expedient a man can use against us, if he can find means to persuade us that it proceeds from the excess and delicacy of his passion. It is no other than a silent compliment, by which our accomplishments are continually flattered, and pleases in proportion to the supposed understanding of him who pays it.

'By

'By these arts and advantages this consummate politician in love began by degrees to sap the foundations of my conjugal faith; he stole imperceptibly into my affection, and by dint of opportunity, which he well knew how to improve, triumphed, at last, over all his rivals.

'Nor was he the only person that disputed my heart with Earl C——. That nobleman was also rivalled by Lord C— H—, a Scotchman, who had been an intimate and relation of my former husband. Him I would have preferred to most of his competitors, and actually coquetted with him for some time: but the amour was interrupted by his going to Ireland; upon which occasion, understanding that he was but indifferently provided with money, I made him a present of a gold snuff-box, in which was inclosed a bank-note; a trifling mark of my esteem, which he afterwards justified by the most grateful, friendly, and genteel behaviour; and as we corresponded by letters, I frankly told him, that Mr. S— had stepped in, and won the palm from all the rest of my admirers.

'This new favourite's mother and sisters, who lived in the neighbourhood, were my constant companions; and, in consequence of this intimacy, he never let a day pass without paying his respects to me in person; nay, so ingenious was he in contriving the means of promoting his suit, that whether I rode or walked, went abroad or stayed at home, he was always of course one of the party: so that his design seemed to engross his whole vigilance and attention. Thus he studied my disposition, and established himself in my good opinion at the same time. He found my heart was susceptible of every tender impression, and saw that I was not free from the vanity of youth; he had already acquired my friendship and esteem, from which he knew there was a short and easy transition to love. By his penetration chusing proper seasons for the theme, he urged it with such pathetick vows and artful adulation, as well might captivate a young woman of my complexion and inexperience,

inexperience, and circumſtanced as I was, with a huſband whom I had ſuch reaſon to deſpiſe.

'Though he thus made an inſenſible progreſs in my heart, he did not find my virtue an eaſy conqueſt; and I myſelf was ignorant of the advantage he had gained, with regard to my inclinations, until I was convinced of his ſucceſs by an alarm of jealouſy which I one day felt, at ſeeing him engaged in converſation with another lady. I forthwith recognized this ſymptom of love, with which I had been formerly acquainted, and trembled at the diſcovery of my own weakneſs. I underwent a ſtrange agitation and mixture of contrary ſenſations: I was pleaſed with the paſſion, yet aſhamed of avowing it even to my own mind. The rights of a huſband (though mine was but a nominal one) occurred to my reflection, and virtue, modeſty, and honour, forbade me to cheriſh the guilty flame.

'When I encouraged theſe laudable ſcruples, and reſolved to ſacrifice my love to duty and reputation, my lord was almoſt every day employed in riding poſt to my father, with complaints of my conduct, which was hitherto irreproachable; though the greateſt grievance which he pretended to have ſuffered, was my refuſing to comply with his deſire, when he entreated me to lie a whole hour every morning with my neck uncovered, that by gazing he might quiet the perturbation of his ſpirits. From this requeſt you may judge of the man, as well as of the regard I muſt entertain for his character and diſpoſition.

'During the whole ſummer I was beſieged by my artful undoer, and in the autumn ſet out with my lord for Bath; where, by reaſon of the intimacy that ſubſiſted between our families, we lived in the ſame houſe with my lover and his ſiſter, who, with another agreeable young lady, accompanied us in this expedition. By this time Mr. S— had extorted from me a confeſſion of a mutual flame; though I aſſured him that it ſhould never induce me to give up the valuable poſſeſſion of an unſpotted character, and a conſcience void of

of offence. I offered him all the enjoyment he could reap from an unreserved intercourſe of ſouls, abſtracted from any ſenſual conſideration. He eagerly embraced the Platonick propoſal, becauſe he had ſagacity enough to foreſee the iſſue of ſuch chimerical contracts, and knew me too well to think he could accompliſh his purpoſe without ſeeming to acquieſce in my own terms, and cultivating my tenderneſs under the ſpecious pretext.

'In conſequence of this agreement, we took all opportunities of ſeeing each other in private; and theſe interviews were ſpent in mutual proteſtations of diſintereſted love. This correſpondence, though dangerous, was (on my ſide) equally innocent and endearing; and many happy hours we paſſed, before my ſentiments were diſcovered. At length my lover was taken ill, and then my paſſion burſt out beyond the power of concealment; my grief and anxiety became ſo conſpicuous in my countenance, and my behaviour was ſo indiſcreet, that every body in the houſe perceived the ſituation of my thoughts, and blamed my conduct accordingly.

'Certain it is, I was extremely imprudent, though intentionally innocent. I have lain whole nights by my lord, who teazed and tormented me for that which nither I could give nor he could take, and ruminated on the fatal conſequence of this unhappy flame, until I was worked into a fever of diſquiet. I ſaw there was ſafety but in flight, and often determined to baniſh myſelf for ever from the ſight of this dangerous intruder. But my reſolution always failed at the approach of day, and my deſire of ſeeing him as conſtantly recurred. So far was I from perſiſting in ſuch commendable determinations, that, on the eve of our departure from Bath, I felt the keeneſt pangs of ſorrow at our approaching ſeparation; and as we could not enjoy our private interviews at my houſe in town, I promiſed to viſit him at his own apartments, after he had ſworn by all that's ſacred, that he would take no ſiniſter advantage of my

 condeſcenſion,

condescension, by presuming upon the opportunities I should give.

'He kept his word; for he saw I trusted to it with fear and trembling, and perceived that my apprehension was not affected, but the natural concern of a young creature, distracted between love and duty, whom had he alarmed, he never would have seen within his doors again. Instead of pressing me with solicitations in favour of his passion, he was more than ever respectful and complaisant; so that I found myself disengaged of all restraint, conducted the conversation, shortened and repeated my visits at my own pleasure, till at last I became so accustomed to this communication, that his house was as familiar to me as my own.

'Having in this manner secured himself in my confidence, he resumed the favourite topick of love, and warming my imagination by gradual advances on the subject, my heart began to pant; when he saw me thus moved, he snatched the favourable occasion to practise all his eloquence and art. I could not resist his energy, nor even fly from the temptation that assailed me, until he had obtained a promise that he should, at our next meeting, reap the fruits of his tedious expectation. Upon this condition I was permitted to retire; and blessed Heaven for my escape, fully determined to continue in the path of virtue I had hitherto trod, and stifle the criminal flame, by which my peace and reputation were endangered. But his idea which reigned in my heart without controul, soon baffled all these prudent suggestions.

'I saw him again; and he reminded me of my promise, which I endeavoured to evade with affected pleasantry; upon which he manifested the utmost displeasure and chagrin, shedding some crocodile tears, and upbraiding me with levity and indifference. He observed, that he had solicited my favour for ten long months, without intermission, and imagined I had held out so long on virtuous motives only! but now he could plainly perceive that his want of success had been owing,

owing to my want of affection, and that all my professions were insincere; in a word, he persuaded me, that his remonstrances were just and reasonable. I could not see the affliction of a man I loved, when I knew it was in my power to remove it; and rather than forfeit his opinion of my sincerity and love, I consented to his wish. My heart now flutters at the remembrance of the dear, though fatal indiscretion; yet I reflect without remorse, and even remember it with pleasure.

'If I could not avoid the censure of the world, I was resolved to bear it without repining; and sure the guilt (if there was any in my conduct) was but venial; for I considered myself as a person absolved of all matrimonial ties, by the insignificance of Lord ——, who, though a nominal husband, was in fact a mere non-entity, I therefore contracted a new engagement with my lover, to which I resolved to adhere with the most scrupulous fidelity, without the least intention of injuring my lord or his relations; for had our mutual passion produced any visible effects, I would immediately have renounced and abandoned my husband for ever, that the fruit of my love for Mr. S—— might not have inherited to the detriment of the right heir. This was my determination, which I thought just, if not prudent; and for which I have incurred the imputation of folly, in the opinion of this wise and honest generation, by whose example and advice I have, since that time, been a little reformed in point of prudentials, though I still retain a strong tendency to return to my primitive way of thinking.

'When I quitted Mr. S——, after the sacrifice I had made, and returned to my own bed, it may perhaps be supposed that I slept but little. True: I was kept awake by the joyful impatience of revisiting my lover. Indeed, I neglected no opportunity of flying to his arms: when Lord —— was in the country, we enjoyed each other's company without interruption; but when he resided in town our correspondence was limited

to stolen interviews, which were unspeakably delicious, as genuine love presided at the entertainment.

'Such was my happiness, in the course of this tender communication, that to this day I remember it with pleasure, though it has cost me dear in the sequel, and was at that time enjoyed at a considerable expence; for I devoted myself so entirely to my lover, who was desirous of engrossing my time and thoughts, that my acquaintance which was very numerous, justly accused me of neglect, and of consequence cooled in their friendships; but I was *all for love, or the world well lost.* And were the same opportunity to offer, I would act the same conduct over again.

'Some there are who possibly may wonder how I could love twice with such violence of affection; but all such observers must be unacquainted with the human heart. Mine was naturally adapted for the tender passions, and had been so fortunate, so cherished in it's first impressions, that it felt with joy the same sensations revive, when influenced by the same engaging qualifications. Certain it is, I loved the second time as well as the first, and better was impossible. I gave up my all for both: fortune and my father's favour for the one; reputation, friends, and fortune, for the other. Yet, notwithstanding this intimate connection, I did not relinquish the world all at once; on the contrary, I still appeared at court, and attracted the notice and approbation of my royal patroness; I danced with the P—— of W——, a circumstance which so nearly affected Mr. S——, who was present, that, in order to manifest his resentment, he chose the ugliest woman in the ball for his partner; and I no sooner perceived his uneasiness than I gave over, with a view of appeasing his displeasure.

'Without repeating particular circumstances, let it suffice to say, our mutual passion was a perfect copy of that which had subsisted between me and my dear Lord W——m. It was jealous, melting, and delicate, and chequered with little accidents, which serve to animate and

and maintain the flame in it's first ardency of rapture. When my lover was sick, I attended and nursed him with indefatigable tenderness and care; and during an indisposition which I caught in the performance of this agreeable office, he discharged the obligation with all the warmth of sympathy and love.

'It was, however, judged necessary by the physicians, that I should use the Bath waters for the recovery of my health; and I set out for that place, glad of a pretence to be absent from Lord ——, with whom I lived on very unhappy terms. He had, about nine months after our marriage, desired that we might sleep in separate beds, and gave a very whimsical reason for this proposal. He said, the immensity of his love deprived him of the power of gratification, and that some commerce with an object, to which his heart was not attached, might, by diminishing the transports of his spirits, recompose his nerves, and enable him to enjoy the fruits of his good fortune.

'You may be sure I made no objections to this plan, which was immediately put in execution. He made his addresses to a nymph of Drury Lane, whose name (as he told me) was Mrs. Rock. She made shift to extract some money from her patient; but his infirmity was beyond the power of her art, though she made some mischief between us; and I communicated my suspicion to Duke H——, who intended to have expostulated with her upon the subject; but she got intimation of his design, and saved him the trouble by a precipitate retreat.

'After my return from the Bath, where Mr. S—— and I had lived happily, until we were interrupted by the arrival of my husband, his lordship expressed an inclination to be my bedfellow again. In this particular I desired to be excused. I would not be the first to propose the separation, which, though usual in other countries, is contrary to the custom of England, being unwilling to furnish the least handle for censure, as my character was still unblemished; yet, when the propo-

sal came from him, I though myself entitled to refuse a re-union, to which I accordingly objected.

'This opposition produced a quarrel, which rose to a state of perpetual animosity; so that we began to talk of parting. My lord relished the expedient, agreeing to add three hundred pounds a year to my pin-money, which by the bye was never paid; and I renounced all state and grandeur, to live in a small house that I hired at Case Horton, where I passed my time for two months, in the most agreeable retirement, with my dear lover. At length I was disturbed by the intrusion of my lord, who molested me with visits and solicitations to return, pretending that he had changed his mind, and insisting upon my compliance with his desire.

'I exhausted my invention in endeavours to evade his request; but he persecuted me without ceasing: so that I was fain to capitulate, on condition that he should immediately set out for France; and that he should not presume to approach my bed till our arrival at Calais. We accordingly departed for that kingdom; and, far from infringing the last article of our treaty, his lordship did not insist on his privilege, before we reached the capital of France.

'Meanwhile, I began to feel the effect of my passion in a very interesting manner, and communicated my discovery to the dear author of it, who would not leave me in such an affecting situation, but took the first opportunity of following us to France.

'In our road to Paris, we stopped to visit Chantilly, a magnificent chateau belonging to the Prince of Condé, and there met by accident with some English noblemen, to whom I was known. The prince and his sisters invited me very politely into the gallery where they sat. They complimented me on my person, and seemed to admire my dress, which was altogether new to them, being a blue English riding-habit trimmed with gold, and an hat with a feather. They were particularly well pleased with my hair, which hung down to my waist, and pressed me to stay a fortnight at their house;

house; an invitation which I was very much mortified at being obliged to refuse, because my lord did not understand the French language. I was inchanted with the place and the company, the women being amiable and the men polite; nor were they strangers to my name and story; for Mr. S—— calling at the same place a few days after, they rallied him on my account.

When we arrived at Paris, the first thing I did was to metamorphose myself into a Frenchwoman. I cut off my hair; hid a very good complexion of my own with *rouge*: reconciled myself to powder, which I had never used before; put on a robe, with a large hoop; and went to the Thuilleries full of spirits and joy; for at that time every thing conspired to make me happy. I had health, youth, and beauty, love, vanity, and affluence, and found myself surrounded with diversions, which were gay, new, and agreeable. My appearance drew upon me the eyes of the whole company, who considered me as a stranger, but not a foreigner, so compleatly was I equipped in the fashion of the French; and when they understood who I was, they applauded my person with the most lavish encomiums, according to their known politeness.

'After having made a circuit round all the publick places of entertainment in Paris, I was introduced into company by an English family residing in that city; and, among others, became acquainted with a French lady, whose charms were remarkably attractive. The Duke of K—— was her admirer; but she lived in reputation with her mother and an agreeable sister, whose lover was the Prince of C—— (for almost every lady in France has her *aimant*.)

'With this charming woman, whose name was Madame De la T——, I often made parties of pleasure. The duke, Mr. S——, she and I, used to meet in the Bois de Boulogne, which is a pleasure wood at a small distance from Paris, whither the company repairs, in the summer-season, for the benefit of the air: and after having

having amuſed ourſelves among the groves, embarked in his grace's equipage, which was extremely elegant, being a calaſh drawn by ſix fine long-tailed greys, adorned with ribbands in the French taſte; and thus we were conducted to a little enchanted, or at leaſt enchanting palace poſſeſſed by the duke, at one end of the town: the lower apartment, appropriated to me, was furniſhed with yellow and ſilver; the bed ſurrounded with looking-glaſſes, and the door opened into the garden, laid out in a cradle-walk, and intervening parterres of roſes and other flowers. Above ſtairs my female companion lodged, in a chamber furniſhed with chintz. We ſupped all together in the ſaloon, which, though ſmall, was perfectly elegant. The company was always good-humoured, the converſation ſprightly and joyous, and the ſcene, though often repeated, ſtill delightful and entertaining.

'At other times, Mr. S—— and I uſed to paſs our evenings at the palace of the Prince of C——, which his highneſs lent us for our accommodation. The apartments opened into the gardens of the Luxembourg, and were, in point of magnificence, ſuitable to the owner. Thither I uſed to repair in a flaming equipage, on pretence of viſiting, and ſpent the beſt part of the night with him, who was dearer to me than all the princes in the world.

'While I was happily engaged in theſe raviſhing parties, my little lord was employed in efforts to recover his health by reſtoratives, and I know not what, for he ſtill lamented the enfeebling effects of his paſſion, and complained, that he loved me more like an angel than a woman, though he ſtrove to govern his affection according to the doctrines of the Chriſtian religion, as he regulated his life by the maxims of Charles the Twelfth of Sweden. The meaning of this declaration I could never learn; and, indeed, I have been often tempted to believe he had no meaning at all.

'Be that as it will, I found my ſize viſibly increaſing, and my ſituation extremely uneaſy, on account of the perpetual

perpetual wrangling which prevailed betwixt us, in consequence of his desiring to sleep with me again, after we had parted beds for the second time: and, that I might be no longer exposed to such disagreeable persecutions, I resolved to leave him, though at the hazard of my life.

'Thus determined, I went to the British ambassador in a hackney-coach; and, in order to disguise my youth, which might have prepossessed him against my judgment, muffled myself up in a black hood, which (as he said) instead of lending an air of gravity to my countenance, added a wildness to my looks, which was far from being disagreeable. He had been a gallant man in his youth; and even then, though well stricken in years, was not insensible to the power of beauty. This disposition, perhaps, rendered him more favourable to my cause, though he at first advised me to return to my husband; but finding me obstinate, he undertook to serve me in my own way, and procure a protection from the French king, by virtue of which I could live at Paris unmolested by my lord. Nevertheless, he advised me (if I was determined to leave him) to make the best of my way to England, and sue for a divorce.

'I relished his opinion, and concealed myself about three days in Paris, during which I borrowed some linen: for, as it was impossible to convey any thing out of my own house without suspicion, I had neither cloaths for my accomodation, nor a servant to wait on me.

'In this solitary condition I took the road to Flanders, after I had put my lord on a wrong scent, by writing a letter to him, dated at Calais, and travelled through an unknown country, without any other attendant than the postillion, being subjected to this inconvenience by the laws of France, which are so severe in some particulars, that if any person had been apprehended with me, he would have suffered death, for going off with a man's wife, though any man might go

to

to bed with the same woman, without fear of incurring any legal punishment.

'I proceeded night and day without intermission, that I might the sooner reach Flanders, where I knew I should be safe; and as the nights were excessively cold, I was fain to wrap myself up in flannel, which I bought for the purpose, as I had no cloaths to keep me warm, and travelled in an open chaise. While we passed through dreary woods, quite remote from the habitations of men, I was not without apprehension of being stripped and murdered by the postillion; and in all probability, owed my safety to the indigence of my appearance, which might also protect me in two miserable places where I was obliged to lie, before I got out of the territories of France; for, as I could not reach the great towns where I intended to lodge, I was under the necessity of putting up at little wretched hovels, where no provision was to be had, but sour brown bread, and sourer cheese: and every thing seemed to denote the dens of despair and assassination.

'I made shift, however, to subsist on this fare, uncomfortable as it was; confided in the meanness of my equipage for the security of my person; and at length arriving at Brussels, fixed my quarters in the Hotel de Flandre, (so well known to the English since) where I thought myself extremely happy in the accomplishment of my flight.

'I had not been full two days in this place, when I was blessed with the sight of my lover, who followed me on the wings of love, in pursuance of the plan we had projected before my departure from Paris. Here we concerted measures for proceeding to England. I hired a tall, fine Liegeoise, for a maid, and setting out for Ostend, we embarked in a vessel, in which Mr. S— had bespoke our passage. Our voyage was short and prosperous, and the time most agreeably spent in the company of my dear partner, who was a most engaging man in all respects, as I dare say my Lady Q—— has since found him.

'I assumed

'I assumed a fictitious name, took private lodgings in Poland Street, retained lawyers, and commenced a suit for separation against my lord. I communicated the reason of my elopement to my father, who was shocked and surprized at my conduct, which he condemned with expressions of sorrow and resentment. But the step was taken; nor did I repent of what I had done, except on his account.

'In the morning after my arrival at London, I waited upon the lord chief justice, to whom I complained of the usage I had received from my lord, whose temper was teazing, tiresome, and intolerably capricious. Indeed his behaviour was a strange compound of madness and folly, seasoned with a small proportion of sense: no wonder, then, that I who am hot and hasty, should be wretched, under the persecution of such a perverse humourist, who used to terrify me, and scold at me the whole night without intermission, and shake my pillow from time to time, that I might not sleep, while he tormented me with his disagreeable expostulations. I have been often frightened almost out of my senses, at seeing him convulsed with the most unreasonable passion; and chagrined to the highest degree of disgust, to find, (by repeated observation) his disposition so preposterous, that his satisfaction and displeasure never depended upon the cause he had to be satisfied or disobliged; but, on the contrary, when he had most reason to be pleased, he was always most discontented, and very often in good-humour, when he had reason enough for vexation.

'While I lived in Poland Street, I was engaged with lawyers, and so often visited by my father, that I could not dedicate my whole time, as usual, to my lover; nor was it convenient that he should be seen in my company; he therefore took a small house at Camberwell, whither I went as often as I had an opportunity; and maintained the correspondence with such eagerness and industry, that although I was six months gone with child, I have often, by myself, set out for

his

his habitation in a hackney-coach at eleven o'clock at night, and returned by ſix in the morning, that I might be in my own bed, when my father came to ſee me; for I concealed my amour, as well as the effects of it, from his knowledge, and frequently took water from the Bridge, that my motions might not be diſcovered. Nothing but the moſt paſſionate love could have ſupported my ſpirits under ſuch viciſſitudes of fatigue, or enabled my admirer to ſpend whole days by himſelf in ſuch a ſolitary retirement.

'By this time my lord was arrived in England, and employed in diſcovering the place of my retreat; ſo that I lived in continual alarm, and provided myſelf with a ſpeaking trumpet, which ſtood by my bed-ſide, to be uſed in calling for aſſiſtance, in caſe my purſuer ſhould make an attack upon my lodgings.

'This ſituation being extremely uncomfortable, I had no ſooner began my proceſs againſt him, than I put myſelf entirely under the protection of Mr. S——, who conducted me to the houſe of a friend of his who lived in the country, where I was ſecure from the attempts of my huſband.

'The world had now given me up, and I renounced the world with the moſt perfect reſignation. I weighed in my own breaſt what I ſhould loſe in point of character, with what I ſuffered in my peace at home, and found, that my reputation was not to be preſerved, except at the expence of my quiet, (for his lordſhip was not diſpoſed to make me eaſy, had I been ever ſo diſcreet.) I therefore determined to give up a few ceremonial viſits, and empty profeſſions, for the more ſubſtantial enjoyments of life.

'We paſſed our time very agreeably, in various amuſements, with this friend of Mr. S——, until the term of my reckoning was almoſt expired, then returned to London, and took lodgings in Southampton Street, where I began to make preparations for the approaching occaſion. Here I propoſed to live with the utmoſt circumſpection. I diſguiſed my name, ſaw nobody but

 my

my lawyer and lover, and never approached the window, lest I should be discovered by accident.

'Notwithstanding these precautions, my French maid, whom I had sent for some of my cloaths, was dogged in her return, and next morning my lord took my lodgings by storm. Had he given the assault in his own person only, I make no doubt but he would have suffered a repulse, from the opposition of the Liegeoise, who made all the resistance in her power, but was obliged to give way to superior number.

'I was at that time a-bed, and hearing an unusual noise below, rung my bell, in order to know the cause of such disturbance. I drew my curtain at the same time, and who should I see entering my chamber but his lordship, attended by a constable, and the footman who had discovered my retreat.

'Such an unexpected visit could not fail to affect me with surprize and consternation: however, I summoned all my fortitude to my aid, and perceiving the fellows were about to open my window-shutters, desired their principal to order them down stairs. He readily complied with my request, and sitting down by my bed-side, told me with an air of triumph, that he had found me at last; and I frankly owned that I was heartily sorry for his success. Instead of upbraiding me with my escape, he proceeded to entertain me with all the news in town, and gave me a minute detail of every thing which had happened to him since our parting; among other articles of intelligence, giving me to understand, that he had challenged Mr. S——, who refused to fight him, and was in disgrace with the Prince of W—— on that account.

'But here his lordship did not strictly adhere to the naked truth: he had, indeed, before our departure from the country, gone to my lover, and insisted upon having satisfaction in Hyde Park, two days from the date of his demand, and at three o'clock in the afternoon. S——, believing him in earnest, accepted the invitation, though he observed, that these affairs could

not be discussed too soon, and wished the time of meeting might be at an earlier hour. But his lordship did not chuse to alter the circumstances of his first proposal: and when he went away, said he should expect him at the appointed time and place, if it did not rain.

'His antagonist gave me an account of the conversation, when I assured him the business would end in smoke. Accordingly, my lord sent him a letter on Monday, desiring that the assignation might be deferred till Thursday, that he might have time to settle his affairs, and pay S—— an hundred pounds, which he had formerly borrowed of him. When Thursday came, he was favoured with another epistle, importing, that the challenger had changed his mind, and would seek satisfaction at law. Thus ended that heroick exploit, which his lordship now boasted of with such arrogant misrepresentation.

'While he regaled me with these interesting particulars, I was contriving a scheme to frustrate the discovery he had made: so that I did not contradict his assertions: but told him, that if he would go down stairs, I would rise and come to breakfast. He consented to this proposal with great chearfulness; and I own, I was not a little surprized to find him, at this first interview, in as good a humour, as if nothing had happened to interrupt the felicity of our matrimonial union.

'It cost me some invention to conceal my condition from his notice, being now within a week of the expected crisis; but I knew I had to do with a man of no great penetration, and succeeded in my attempt accordingly. We breakfasted with great harmony, and I invited him to dinner, after having prevailed upon him to send away his myrmidons, whom, nevertheless, he ordered to return at eleven o'clock at night. We conversed together with great gaiety and mirth. When I rallied him for visiting me in such a dishabille, he stood a tiptoe to view himself in the glass; and owning I was in the right, said he would go and dress himself before dinner.

'He accordingly went away, charging my maid to give

give him entrance at his return; and he was no ſooner gone than I wrote to Mr. S——, giving him an account of what had happened. Then, without having determined upon any certain plan, I huddled on my cloaths, muffled myſelf up, and calling a chair, went to the next tavern, where I ſtayed no longer than was ſufficient to change my vehicle; and, to the aſtoniſhment of the drawers, who could not conceive the meaning of my perturbation, proceeded to a ſhop in the neighbourhood, where I diſmiſſed my ſecond chair, and procured a hackney coach, in which I repaired to the lodgings of my lawyer, whom I could truſt. Having made him acquainted with the circumſtances of my diſtreſs, and conſulted him about a proper place of retreat, after ſome recollection he directed me to a little houſe in a court, to which, by the aſſiſtance of my lover, my woman and cloaths were ſafely conveyed that ſame evening.

'My lord, however, came to dinner, according to invitation, and did not ſeem at all alarmed when my maid told him I was gone; but ſtepped to my lawyer, to know if he thought I ſhould return. Upon his anſwering in the affirmative, and adviſing his lordſhip to go back in the mean time, and eat the dinner I had provided, he very deliberately took his advice, made a very hearty meal, drank his bottle of wine, and as I did not return according to his expectation, withdrew, in order to conſult his aſſociates.

'This motion of his furniſhed my woman with an opportunity of making her retreat; and when he returned at night, the coaſt was clear, and he found nobody in the houſe but a porter, who had been left to take care of the furniture. He was ſo enraged at this diſappointment, that he made a furious noiſe, which raiſed the whole neighbourhood, reinforced his crew with the authority of a juſtice of the peace, tarried in the ſtreet till three o'clock in the morning, diſcharged a lodging he had hired at a barber's ſhop oppoſite to the houſe from which I had eſcaped, and retired with

the comfortable reflection of having done every thing which man could do to retrieve me.

'The hurry of spirits and surprize I had undergone in effecting this retreat, produced such a disorder in my constitution, that I began to fear I should be delivered before I could be provided with necessaries for the occasion. I signified my apprehension to Mr. S—, who, with infinite care and concern, endeavoured to find a more convenient place; and, after all his enquiries, was obliged to fix upon a paltry apartment in the city, though his tenderness was extremely shocked at the necessity of chusing it. However, there was no remedy, nor time to be lost: to this miserable habitation I was conveyed in a hackney coach; and though extremely ill, bore my fate with spirit and resignation, in testimony of my sincere and indelible attachment to my lover, for whose ease and pleasure I could have suffered every inconvenience, and even sacrificed my life.

'Immediately after I had taken possession of my wretched apartment, I was constrained by my indisposition to go to bed, and send for the necessary help; and in a few hours a living pledge of my love and indiscretion saw the light; though the terrors and fatigue I had undergone had affected this little innocent so severely, that it scarce discovered any visible signs of life.

'My grief at this misfortune was inexpressible; I forthwith dispatched a message to the dear, the anxious father, who flew to my arms, and shared my sorrow, with all the gentleness of love and parental fondness; yet our fears were (for that time) happily disappointed by the recovery of our infant daughter, who was committed to the care of a nurse in the neighbourhood; so that I could every day be satisfied in my enquiries about her health. Thus I continued a whole fortnight in a state of happiness and tranquillity, being blessed with the conversation and tender offices of my admirer, whose love and attention I wholly engrossed. In a word, he gave up all business and amusement, and con-

centred

centered all his care and assiduity in ministering to my ease and satisfaction. And sure I had no cause to regret what I had suffered on his account!

'But this my agreeable situation was one day disturbed by a most alarming accident, by which my life was drawn into imminent danger. The room under my bed-chamber took fire; I immediately smelled it, and saw the people about me in the utmost perplexity and consternation, though they would not own the true cause of their confusion, lest my health should suffer in the fright. Nevertheless, I was so calm in my enquiries, that they ventured to tell me my suspicion was but too just; upon which I gave such directions as would secure me from catching cold, in case there should be a necessity for removing me; but the fire being happily extinguished, I escaped that ceremony, which might have cost me my life. Indeed it was surprizing, that the agitation of my spirits did not produce some fatal effect upon my constitution; and I looked upon my deliverance as the protection of a particular Providence.

'Though I escaped the hazard of a sudden removal, I found it was high time to change my lodgings, because the neighbours rushing into the house upon the alarm of fire, had discovered my situation, though they were ignorant of my name; and I did not think myself safe in being the subject of their conjectures. Mr. S—— therefore procured another apartment, with better accommodation, to which I was carried as soon as my health would admit of my removal; and soon after my lord wrote to me by the hands of my lawyer, earnestly entreating me to drop my prosecution, and come home. But I would not comply with his request; and nothing was farther from my intention than the desire of receiving any favours at his hands.

'Thus repulsed, he set on foot a most accurate research for my person; in the course of which he is said to have detected several ladies and young girls, who had reasons for keeping themselves concealed; and

had like to have been very severely handled for his impertinent curiosity. Being unsuccessful in all his attempts, he entered into a treaty with Sir R—H—, a person of a very indifferent character, who undertook to furnish him with an infallible expedient to discover the place of my abode, if he would gratify him with a bond for a thousand pounds; which being executed accordingly, this worthy knight advertised me and my maid in the publick papers, offering one hundred pounds as a reward to any person who should disclose the place of our retirement.

'As soon as the paper fell into my hands, I was again involved in perplexity; and being afraid of staying in town, resolved, with the concurrence of my lover, to accept of an invitation I had received from the Duke of K——, who had by this time arrived in England, with that lady whom I have already mentioned, as one of our parties at Paris. Having visited my little infant, I next day set out for the duke's country-seat, which is a most elegant *chateau*, and stands in a charming situation. Mr. S—— followed in a few days; we met with a very cordial reception; his grace was civil and good-natured, lived nobly, and loved pleasure. Madame La T—— was formed to please; there was always a great deal of good company in the house: so that we passed our time agreeably in playing at billiards, and cards, hunting, walking, reading, and conversation.

'But my terms of happiness were generally of short duration. In the midst of this felicity I was overtaken by a most severe affliction, in the death of my dear hapless infant, who had engrossed a greater share of my tenderness, than perhaps I even should have paid to the offspring of a legitimate contract, because the circumstance of her birth would have been an insurmountable misfortune to her through the whole course of her life, and rendered her absolutely dependent on my love and protection.

'Whilst I still lamented the untimely fate of this fair

fair bloſſom, Lord —— came down, and demanded me as his wife; but the ſuit which I then maintained againſt him deprived him, for the preſent, of a huſband's right; and therefore the duke would not deliver me into his hands.

'In ſix months he repeated his viſit and demand; and an agreement was patched up, in conſequence of which I conſented to live in the ſame houſe with him, on condition that he ſhould never deſire to ſleep with me, or take any other meaſure to diſturb my peace; otherwiſe I ſhould be at liberty to leave him again, and entitled to the proviſion of a ſeparate maintenance. To theſe articles I aſſented, by the advice of my lawyers, with a view of obtaining my pin-money, which I had never received ſince our parting, but ſubſiſted on the ſale of my jewels, which were very conſiderable, and had been preſented to me with full power of alienation. As to my lover, he had no fortune to ſupport me, and for that reaſon I was ſcrupulouſly cautious of augmenting his expence.

'We had now enjoyed each other's company for three years, during which our mutual paſſion had ſuffered no abatement, nor had my happineſs been mixed with any conſiderable allay, except that late ſtroke of Providence which I have already mentioned, and the reflection of the ſorrow that my conduct had entailed upon my dear father, whom I loved beyond expreſſion, and whom nothing could have compelled me to diſoblige, but a more powerful flame, that prevailed over every other conſideration. As I was now forced to break off this enchanting correſpondence, it is not to be doubted that our parting coſt us the moſt acute ſenſations of grief and diſappointment. However, there was no remedy: I tore myſelf from his arms, took my leave of the family, after having acknowledged my obligations to the duke, and ſet out for the place of rendezvous; where I was met by my lord, attended by a ſteward whom he had lately engaged, and who was one chief cauſe of our future ſeparations. My lord having

quitted

quitted his houſe in town, conducted me to his lodgings in Pall Mall, and inſiſted upon ſleeping with me the firſt night; but I refuſed to gratify his deſire, on the authority of our agreement.

'This diſpute produced a quarrel, in conſequence of which I attempted to leave the houſe. He endeavouring to prevent my retreat, I fairly locked him in, ran down ſtairs, and calling a hackney-coach, made the beſt of my way into the city, to my father's lodgings, where I lay, the family being in town, though he himſelf was in the country. I wrote to him immediately, and when he came to London, declared my intention of ſeparating from my lord; in which, ſeeing me obſtinate and determined, he at length acquieſced, and a formal ſeparation actually enſued, which at that time I thought binding and immutable.

'I was now ſheltered under the wings of an indulgent father, who had taken me into favour again, on the ſuppoſition that my commerce with Mr. S—— was abſolutely at an end. Nevertheleſs though we had ſeparated, in all appearance for ever, we had previouſly agreed to maintain our correſpondence in private interviews, which ſhould eſcape the notice of the world, with which I was again obliged to keep ſome meaſures.

'Our parting at the Duke of K——'s houſe in the country was attended with all the genuine marks of ſincere and reciprocal affection, and I lived in the ſweet hope of ſeeing him again, in all the tranſports of his former paſſion; when my lawyer, who received my letters, brought me a billet one night, just as I had gone to bed. Seeing the ſuperſcription of S——'s hand-writing, I opened it with all the impatience of an abſent lover: but how ſhall I deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and conſternation with which I was ſeized, when I peruſed the contents! Inſtead of the moſt tender vows and proteſtations, this fatal epiſtle began with *Madam, the beſt thing you can do is to return to your father*: or ſome cold and killing expreſſion, to that effect.

'Heaven

'Heaven and earth! what did I feel at this dire conjuncture! The light forſook my eyes; a cold ſweat bedewed my limbs; and I was overwhelmed with ſuch a torrent of ſorrow and ſurprize, that every body preſent believed I would have died under the violent agitation. They endeavoured to ſupport my ſpirits with repeated draughts of ſtrong liquor, which had no ſenſible effect upon my conſtitution, though for eight whole years I had drank nothing ſtronger than water; and I muſt have infallibly periſhed in the firſt extaſy of my grief, had it not made its way in a fit of tears and exclamation, in which I continued all night, to the amazement of the family, whom my condition had alarmed, and raiſed from their repoſe. My father was the only perſon who gueſſed the cauſe of my affliction: he ſaid he was ſure I had received ſome ill uſage in a letter or meſſage from that raſcal S——, (ſo he termed him, in the bitterneſs of paſſion.)

'At mention of that name my agony redoubled to ſuch a degree, that all who were preſent wept at ſight of my deplorable condition. My poor father ſhed a flood of tears, and conjured me to tell him the cauſe of my diſquiet; upon which, rather than confeſs the truth, I amuſed his concern by pretending that my lover was ill. The whole family having ſtayed by me till I was a little more compoſed, left me to the care of my maid, who put me into bed about ſix in the morning; but I enjoyed no reſt: I revolved every circumſtance of my conduct, endeavouring to find out the cauſe of this fatal change in S——'s diſpoſition; and as I could recollect nothing which could juſtly give offence, concluded that ſome malicious perſons had abuſed his ears with ſtories to my prejudice.

'With this conjecture I got up, and ſent my lawyer to him with a letter, wherein I inſiſted upon ſeeing him, that I might have an opportunity of juſtifying myſelf in perſon; a taſk which would be eaſily performed, as I had never offended, but in loving too well. I waited with the moſt anxious impatience for the return

turn of my meſſenger, who brought me an anſwer couched in the coldeſt terms of civility which indifference could dictate; acknowledging, however, that he had nothing to lay to my charge, but that it was for the good of us both we ſhould part. He ought to have reflected on that before, not after I had ſacrificed my all for his love. I was well nigh diſtracted by this confirmation of his inconſtancy; and I wonder to this day how I retained the uſe of reaſon, under ſuch circumſtances of horror and deſpair. My grief laid aſide all decorum and reſtraint; I told my father that S—— was dying, and that I would viſit him with all expedition.

'Startled at the propoſal, this careful parent demonſtrated the fatal conſequence of ſuch an ungrateful ſtep, reminded me of the difficulty with which he had prevailed upon my mother and uncle to forgive my former imprudence, obſerved that his intention was to carry me into the country next day, in order to effect a perfect reconciliation; but now I was on the brink of forfeiting all pretenſions to their regard, by committing another fatal error, which could not poſſibly be retrieved; and that for his part, whatever pangs it might coſt him, he was reſolved to baniſh me from his ſight for ever.

'While he uttered this declaration, the tears trickled down his cheeks, and he ſeemed overwhelmed with the keeneſt ſorrow and mortification; ſo it may be eaſily conceived what were the impreſſions of my grief, reinforced with the affliction of a father whom I dearly loved, and the conſciouſneſs of being the cauſe of all his diſquiet! I was ſtruck dumb with remorſe and woe; and when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him how ſenſible I was of his great goodneſs and humanity, and owned how little I deſerved his favour and affection; that the ſenſe of my own unworthineſs was one cauſe of my preſent diſtraction; for ſuch was the condition of my fate, that I muſt either ſee S—— or die. I ſaid, though I could not expect his forgiveneſs,

I was

I was surely worthy of his compassion; that nothing but the most irresistible passion could have misled me at first from my duty, or tempted me to incur the least degree of his displeasure; that the same fatal influence still prevailed, and would, in all probability, continue to the grave, which was the only abode in which I hoped for peace.

'While I expressed myself in this manner, my dear good father wept with the most tender sympathy; and saying I might do as I pleased, for he had done with me, quitted the room, leaving me to the cruel sensations of my own heart, which almost bursted with anguish, upbraiding me with a fault which, I could not help committing.

'I immediately hired a chariot and six, and would have set out by myself, had not my father's affection, which all my errors could not efface, provided an attendant. He saw me quite delirious and desperate; and therefore engaged a relation of my own to accompany and take care of me in this rash expedition.

'During this journey, which lasted two days, I felt no remission of grief and anxiety, but underwent the most intolerable sorrow and suspense: at last we arrived at a little house, called the Hut, on Salisbury Plain, where, in the most frantick agitation, I wrote a letter to S——, describing the miserable condition to which I was reduced by his unkindness, and desiring to see him, with the most earnest solicitations.

'This billet I committed to the care of my attendant, and laid strong injunctions upon him to tell Mr. S——, my injuries were so great, and my despair so violent, that if he did not favour me with a visit, I would go to him, though at his sister's house, where he then was.

'He received my message with great coldness, and told my friend, that if I would return to London without insisting upon the interview I demanded, he would in a little time follow me to town, and every thing should be amicably adjusted; but when the messenger

aſſured him, that I was too much tranſported with grief to hear of ſuch a propoſal, he conſented to meet me in the middle of Saliſbury Plain, that we might avoid all obſervation: and though I was little able to walk, I ſet out on foot for the place of aſſignation, my companion following at a ſmall diſtance.

'When I ſaw him leading his horſe down the hill, I collected all my fortitude, and advanced to him with all the ſpeed I could exert; but when I made an effort to ſpeak, my tongue denied its office; and ſo lively was the expreſſion of unutterable ſorrow in my countenance, that his heart (hard as it was) melted at ſight of my ſufferings, which he well knew proceeded from the ſincerity of my love. At length I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, enough to tell him, that I was come to take my leave; and when I would have proceeded, my voice failed me again: but, after a conſiderable pauſe, I found means, with great difficulty, to let him know how ſenſible I was of my own incapacity to retrieve his loſt affections: but that I was willing (if poſſible) to retain his eſteem, of which, could I be aſſured, I would endeavour to compoſe myſelf; that I was determined to leave the kingdom, becauſe I could not bear the ſight of thoſe places where we had been ſo happy in our mutual love; and that, till my departure, I hoped he would viſit me ſometimes, that I might, by degrees, wean myſelf from his company; for I ſhould not be able to ſurvive the ſhock of being deprived of him all at once.

'This addreſs may ſeem very humble to an unconcerned obſerver; but love will tame the proudeſt diſpoſition, as plainly appeared in my caſe; for I had naturally as much ſpirit, or more, than the generality of people have. Mr. S—— was ſo much confounded at the manner of my behaviour, that he ſcarce knew what anſwer to make; for (as he afterwards owned) he expected to hear himſelf upbraided; but he was not proof againſt my tenderneſs. After ſome heſitation, he ſaid he never meant to forſake me entirely, that his affection was

was ſtill unimpaired, and that he would follow me directly to London. I impoſed upon myſelf, and believed what he ſaid, becauſe I could not bear to think of parting with him for ever, and returned to town in a more tranquil ſtate of mind than that in which I had left my father, though my heart was far from being at eaſe; my fears being ingenious enough to foreſee, that I ſhould never be able to overcome his indifference.'

'I took lodgings in Mount Street; and my maid having diſpoſed of herſelf in marriage, hired another, who ſupplied her place very much to my ſatisfaction: ſhe was a good girl, had a particular attachment to me, and for many years, during which ſhe lived in my ſervice, was indefatigably aſſiduous in contributing to my eaſe; or rather, in alleviating my affliction: for, though S—— came up to town according to promiſe, and renewed a ſort of correſpondence with me for the ſpace of five months, his complaiſance would extend no farther; and he gave me to underſtand, that he had determined to go abroad with Mr. V——, whom he accordingly accompanied in his envoying to D——n.

'I underſtood the real cauſe of this expedition, which, notwithſtanding his oaths and proteſtations of unabated love and regard, I conſtrued into a palpable mark of diſlike and diſreſpect; nor could the repeated aſſurances I received from him in letters, mitigate the anguiſh and mortification that preyed upon my heart. I therefore gave up all hopes of recovering the happineſs I had loſt: I told him on the eve of his departure, that he might exerciſe his gallantry a great while, before he would meet with my fellow in point of ſincerity and love; for I would rather have been a ſervant in his houſe, with the privilege of ſeeing him, than the Queen of England debarred of that pleaſure.

'When he took his leave, and went down ſtairs, I ſhrunk at every ſtep he made, as if a new wound had been inflicted upon me; and when I heard the door ſhut behind him, my heart died within me. (I had the ſatiſfaction to hear afterwards, he lamented the loſs of

me prodigiously, and that he had never been so happy since.) I sat down to write a letter, in which I forgave his indifference, because I knew the affections are altogether involuntary, and wished him all the happiness he deserved. I then walked up and down the room in the most restless anxiety, was put to bed by my maid, rose at six, mounted my horse, and rode forty miles, in order to fatigue myself, that I might next night enjoy some repose. This exercise I daily underwent for months together; and when it did not answer my purpose, I used to walk round Hyde Park in the evening, when the place was quite solitary, and unvisited by any other human creature.

'In the course of this melancholy perambulation, I was one day accosted by a very great man, who, after the first salutation, asked whether or not my intercourse with S—— was at an end; and if I had any allowance from my husband. To the first of these questions, I replied in the affirmative; and to the last answered, that my lord did not allow me a great deal; indeed I might have truly said nothing at all, but I was too proud to own my indigence. He then expressed his wonder, how one like me, who had been used to splendour and affluence from my cradle, could make shift to live in my present narrow circumstances; and when I told him that I could make a very good shift, so I had peace, he seemed to lament my situation, and very kindly invited me to sup with his wife at his house. I accepted the invitation, without any apprehension of the consequence; and when I went to the place, was introduced into an apartment, magnificently lighted up, I suppose, for my reception.

'After I had stayed alone for some time in this mysterious situation, without seeing a living soul, my inviter appeared, and said, he hoped I would not take it amiss, that he and I were to sup by ourselves, as he had something to say, which could not be so properly communicated before company or servants. I then, for the first time, perceived his drift, to my no small surprize

surprize and indignation; and with evident marks of displeasure told him, I was sure he had nothing to propose that would be agreeable to my inclination, and that I would immediately leave the house. Upon which he gave me to understand, that I could not possibly retire, because he had sent away my chair, and all his servants were disposed to obey his orders.

'Incensed at this declaration, which I considered as an insult, I answered with an air of resolution, it was very well; I despised his contrivance, and was afraid of nobody. Seeing me thus alarmed, he assured me I had no reason to be afraid; that he had loved me long, and could find no other opportunity of declaring his passion. He said, the queen had told him, that Lord —— had renewed his addresses to me; and as he understood from my own mouth, my correspondence with S—— was absolutely broke off, he thought himself as well intitled as another to my regard. In conclusion, he told me, that I might command his purse, and that he had power enough to bring me into the world again with *éclat*. To these advances I replied, that he was very much mistaken in his opinion of my character, if he imagined I was to be won by any temptations of fortune; and very frankly declared, that I would rather give myself to a footman, than sell myself to a prince.

'Supper being served, we sat down together; but I would neither eat nor drink any thing, except a little bread and water; for I was an odd whimsical girl; and it came into my head, that he might, perhaps, have mixed something in the victuals or wine, which would alter my way of thinking. In short, finding himself baffled in all his endeavours, he permitted me about twelve o'clock to depart in peace, and gave up his suit, as a desperate cause.

'This uncomfortable life did I lead for a whole twelvemonth, without feeling the least abatement of my melancholy. Finding myself worn to a skeleton, I resumed my former resolution of trying to profit by

change of place, and actually went abroad with no other attendant but my woman, and the utmost indifference for life. My intention was to have gone to the south of France, where I thought I could have subsisted on the little I had left, which amounted to five hundred pounds, until the issue of my law-suit, by which I hoped to obtain some provision from my lord; and, without all doubt, my expectation would have been answered, had I put this my plan in execution: but being at Paris, from whence I proposed to set forward in a few days, I sent to M. K——, who had been formerly intimate with my father, and shewn me many civilities during my first residence in France.

'This gentleman favoured me with a visit, and when I made him acquainted with my scheme, dissuaded me from it, as an uncomfortable determination. He advised me to stay at Paris, where with good œconomy, I could live as cheap as in any other place, and enjoy the conversation and countenance of my friends, among which number he declared himself one of the most faithful. He assured me, that I should be always welcome to his table, and want for nothing. He promised to recommend me as a lodger to a friend of his, with whom I would live in a frugal and decent manner; and observed that, as the woman was well known and esteemed by all the English company in Paris, it would be the most reputable step I could take, considering my youth and situation, to lodge with a creditable person, who could answer for my conduct. Thus persuaded, I very simply followed his advice; I say, simply, because, notwithstanding his representations, I soon found my money melt away, without any prospect of a fresh supply. In lieu of this, however, I passed my time very agreeably in several English, and some French families; where, in a little time, I became quite intimate, saw a great deal of company, and was treated with the utmost politeness and regard: yet, in the midst of these pleasures, many a melancholy sigh would rise at the remembrance of my beloved S——, whom,

for ſeveral years, I could not recollect without emotion; but time, company, amuſements, and change of place, in a great meaſure diſſipated theſe ideas, and enabled me to bear my fate with patience and reſignation.

'On my laſt arrival at Paris, I was ſurrounded by a crowd of profeſſed admirers, who ſighed and flattered in the uſual forms; but, beſides that my heart was not yet in a condition to contract new engagements, I was prepoſſeſſed againſt them all, by ſuppoſing that they preſumed upon the knowledge of my indiſcretion with S——; and therefore rejected their addreſſes with deteſtation and diſdain: for, as I have already obſerved, I was not to be won, but by the appearance of eſteem and the moſt reſpectful carriage; and though, by a falſe ſtep, I had, in my own opinion, forfeited my title to the one, I was reſolved to diſcourage the advances of any man who ſeemed deficient in the other.

'In this manner my lovers were, one by one, repulſed, almoſt as ſoon as they preſented themſelves, and I preſerved the independence of my heart, until I became acquainted with a certain peer, whom I often ſaw at the houſe of Mrs. P——, an Engliſh lady then reſident at Paris. This young nobleman profeſſed himſelf deeply enamoured of me, in a ſtyle ſo different from that of my other admirers, that I heard his proteſtations without diſguſt; and though my inclinations were ſtill free, could not find in my heart to diſcountenance his addreſſes, which were preferred with the moſt engaging modeſty, diſintereſtedneſs, and reſpect.

'By theſe never-failing arts, he gradually conquered my indifference, and gained the preference in my eſteem from Lord C——y and the Prince of C——, who were at that time his rivals. But what contributed (more than any conſideration) to his ſucceſs, was his declaring openly, that he would marry me without heſitation, as ſoon as I could obtain a divorce from my preſent huſband, which, in all probability, might have been eaſily procured; for before I left England, Lord —— had

offered me five thousand pounds, if I would consent to such a mutual release, that he might be at liberty to espouse one Miss W—— of Kent, to whom he then made love upon honourable terms: but I was fool enough to refuse his proposal, by the advice of S——; and whether or not his lordship, finding it impracticable to wed his new mistress, began to make love upon another footing, I know not; but certain it is, the mother forbade him the house, a circumstance which he took so heinously ill, that he appealed to the world in a publick advertisement, beginning with, "Whereas, for some time, I have passionately loved Miss W——, and upon my not complying with the mother's proposals, they have turned me out of doors; this is to justify," &c.

'This declaration, signed with his name, was actually printed in a number of detached advertisements, which he ordered to be distributed to the publick; and afterwards, being convinced by some of his friends, that he had done a very silly thing, he recalled them at half a guinea a-piece. A copy of one of them was sent to me at Paris; and I believe my father has now one of the originals in his possession. After this wise vindication of his conduct, he made an attempt to carry off the lady from church by force of arms; but she was rescued by the neighbours, headed by her brother, who being an attorney, had like to have made his lordship smart severely for this exploit.

'Meanwhile my new admirer had made some progress in my heart; and my finances being exhausted, I was reduced to the alternative of returning to Lord —— again, or accepting Earl B——'s love. When my affairs were brought to that issue, I made no hesitation in my choice, putting myself under the protection of a man of honour, whom I esteemed, rather than suffer every sort of mortification from a person who was the object of my abhorrence and contempt. From a mistaken pride, I chose to live in Lord B——'s house, rather than be maintained at his expence in any other

place.

place. We ſpent ſeveral months agreeably in balls and other diverſions, viſited Lord B——k, who lived at the diſtance of a few leagues from Paris, and ſtayed ſome days at his houſe, where the entertainment was, in all reſpects, delightful, elegant, and refined. Their habitation was the rendezvous of the beſt company in France; and Lady B——k maintained the ſame ſuperiority in her own ſex, for which her lord is ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed among the men.

'About Chriſtmas we ſet out for England, accompanied by a little North Briton, who lived with Lord B—— as his companion, and did not at all approve of our correſpondence; whether out of real friendſhip for his patron, or apprehenſion that in time I might ſuperſede his own influence with my lord, I ſhall not pretend to determine. Be that as it will, the froſt was ſo ſevere, that we were detained ten days at Calais, before we could get out of the harbour; and during that time, I reflected ſeriouſly on what my new lover had propoſed: as he was very young, and unacquainted with the world, I thought my ſtory might have eſcaped him; and therefore determined to give him a faithful detail of the whole, that he might not have any thing to reproach me with in the ſequel: beſides, I did not think it honeſt to engage him to do more for me than he might afterwards, perhaps, think I was worth. Accordingly, I communicated to him every particular of my life; and the narration, far from altering his ſentiments, rather confirmed his good opinion, by exhibiting an undoubted proof of my frankneſs and ſincerity. In ſhort, he behaved with ſuch generoſity, as made an abſolute conqueſt of my heart: but my love was of a different kind from that which had formerly reigned within my breaſt, being founded upon the warmeſt gratitude and eſteem, excluſive of any other conſideration, though his perſon was very agreeable, and his addreſs engaging.

'When we arrived in England, I went directly to his country-ſeat, about twelve miles from London, where

where he soon joined me, and we lived some time in perfect retirement; his relations being greatly alarmed with the apprehension that Lord —— would bring an action against him; though he himself desired nothing more, and lived so easy under that expectation, that they soon laid aside their fears on his account.

'We were visited by Mr. H—— B——, a relation of my lord, and one Mr. R—— of the guards; who, with the little Scotchman and my lover, made an agreeable set, among whom I enjoyed hunting, and all manner of country diversions. As to Mr. H—— B——, if ever there was a perfection in one man, it centered in him; or at least, he, of all the men I ever knew, approached nearest to that idea which I had conceived of a perfect character. He was both good and great, possessed an uncommon genius, and the best of hearts. Mr. R—— was a very sociable man, had a good person and cultivated understanding; and my lord was excessively good-humoured; so that, with such companions, no place could be insipid or dull: for my own part, I conducted the family; and as I endeavoured to please and make every body happy, I had the good fortune to succeed. Mr. B—— told me, that before he saw me, he heard I was a fool; but finding (as he was pleased to say) that I had been egregiously misrepresented, he courted my friendship, and a correspondence commenced between us: indeed, it was impossible for any person to know him, without entertaining the utmost esteem and veneration for his virtue.

'After I had lived some time in this agreeable retreat, my husband began to make a bustle; he sent a message, demanding me from Lord B——; then came in person, with his night-cap in his pocket, intending to have stayed all night, had he been asked, and attended by a relation, whom he assured that I was very fond of him, and detained by force from his arms.

'Finding himself disappointed in his expectations, he commenced a law-suit against Lord B——, though not for a divorce, as we desired, but with a view to reclaim

me

me as his lawful wife. His lawyers, however, attempted to prove criminal converſation, in hopes of extorting money from my lover; but their endeavours were altogether fruitleſs; for no ſervant of Lord B—'s or mine could with juſtice ſay, we were ever ſeen to treſpaſs againſt modeſty and decorum; ſo that the plaintiff was nonſuited.

'While this cauſe was depending, all my lover's friends expreſſed fear and concern for the iſſue, while he himſelf behaved with the utmoſt reſolution, and gave me ſuch convincing proofs of a ſtrong and ſteady affection, as augmented my gratitude, and rivetted the ties of my love, which was unblemiſhed, faithful, and ſincere.

'Soon after this event, I was ſeized with a violent fit of illneſs, in which I was viſited by my father, and attended by two phyſicians, one of whom deſpaired of my life, and took his leave accordingly; but Dr. S——, who was the other, perſiſted in his attendance, and in all human appearance ſaved my life; a circumſtance by which he acquired a great ſhare of reputation: yet, notwithſtanding all his aſſiſtance, I was confined to my bed for ten weeks; during which, Lord B——'s grief was immoderate, his care and generoſity unlimited. While I lay in this extremity, Mr. S——, penetrated by my melancholy condition, which revived his tenderneſs, begged leave to be admitted to my preſence; and Lord B—— would have complied with his requeſt, had I not been judged too weak to bear the ſhock of ſuch an interview. My conſtitution, however, agreeably diſappointed their fears; and the fever had no ſooner left me, than I was removed to a hunting-ſeat belonging to my lover, from whence, after I had recovered my ſtrength, we went to B—— Caſtle, where we kept open houſe: and while we remained at this place, Lord B—— received a letter from Lord ——, dated November, challenging him to ſingle combat in May, upon the frontiers of France and Flanders. This defiance was ſent in conſequence of what had paſſed betwixt

them

them long before my indiſpoſition, at a meeting in a certain tavern, where they quarrelled, and in the fray my lover threw his antagoniſt under the table. I counſelled him to take no notice of this rhodomontade, which I knew was void of all intention of performance; and he was wiſe enough to follow my advice; reſolved, however, ſhould the meſſage be repeated, to take the challenger at his word.

'Having reſided ſome time in this place, we returned to the other country houſe which he had left, where Lord B—— addicted himſelf ſo much to hunting, and other male diverſions, that I began to think he neglected me, and apprized him of my ſuſpicion; aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that I would leave him as ſoon as my opinion ſhould be confirmed.

'This declaration had no effect upon his behaviour, which became ſo remarkably cold, that even Mr. R—, who lived with us, imagined that his affection was palpably diminiſhed. When I went to town, I was uſually attended by his couſin, or this gentleman, or both, but ſeldom favoured with his company; nay, when I repaired to Bath, for the re-eſtabliſhment of my health, he permitted me to go alone, ſo that I was quite perſuaded of his indifference; and yet I was miſtaken in my opinion: but I had been ſpoiled by the behaviour of my firſt huſband, and Mr. S——, who never quitted me for the ſake of any amuſement, and often reſiſted the calls of the moſt urgent buſineſs rather than part from me, though but for a few hours. I thought every man who loved me truly, would act in the ſame manner; and whether I am right or wrong in my conjectures, I leave wiſer caſuiſts to judge. Certain it is, ſuch ſacrifice and devotion is the moſt pleaſing proof of an admirer's paſſion; and *voyez moi plus ſouvent, & ne me donnez rien*, is one of my favourite maxims. A man may give money, becauſe he is profuſe; he may be violently fond, becauſe he is of a ſanguine conſtitution; but if he gives me his time, he gives an unqueſtionable proof of my being in full poſſeſſion of his heart.

'My

'My appearance at Bath, without the company of Lord B——, occaſioned a general ſurprize, and encouraged the men to peſter me with addreſſes; every new admirer endeavouring to advance his ſuit, by demonſtrating the unkind and diſreſpectful behaviour of his lordſhip. Indeed, this was the moſt effectual ſtring they could touch: my pride and reſentment were alarmed, and I was weak enough to liſten to one man, who had like to have inſinuated himſelf into my inclinations. He was tall and large boned, with white hair, inclining to what is called ſandy, and had the reputation of being handſome, though I think he ſcarce deſerved that epithet. He poſſeſſed a large fortune, loved miſchief, and ſtuck at nothing for the accompliſhment of his deſigns; one of his chief pleaſures being that of ſetting two lovers at variance. He employed his addreſs upon me with great aſſiduity, and knew ſo well how to manage my reſentment, that I was pleaſed with his manner; heard his vows without diſguſt; and, in a word, promiſed to deliberate with myſelf upon his propoſals, and give him an account of my determination in writing.

'Thus reſolved, I went to Lord B——, in Wiltſhire, whither I was followed by this pretender to my heart, who viſited us on the footing of an acquaintance; but when I reflected on what I had done, I condemned my own conduct as indiſcreet, though nothing deciſive had paſſed between us, and began to hate him in proportion to the ſelf-conviction I felt; perceiving that I had involved myſelf in a difficulty from which I ſhould not be eaſily diſengaged. For the preſent, however, I found means to poſtpone my declaration; he admitted my excuſe, and I returned to London with Lord B—, who was again ſummoned to the field by his former challenger.

'H—d—n, governor, counſellor, and ſteward to this little hero, came to Lord B—— with a verbal meſſage, importing, that his lordſhip had changed his mind about going to Flanders, but expected to meet him

him on ſuch a day and hour, in the burying-ground near Red Lion Square. Lord B—— accepted the challenge, and gave me an account of what had paſſed; but he had been anticipated by the meſſenger, who had already tried to alarm my fears, from the conſideration of the conſequence, that I might take ſome meaſures to prevent their meeting. I perceived his drift, and told him plainly that Lord —— had no intention to riſk his perſon, though he endeavoured with all his might to perſuade me, that his principal was deſperate and determined. I knew my little huſband too well, to think he would bring matters to any dangerous iſſue, and was apprehenſive of nothing but foul play, from the villainy of H—n, with which I was equally well acquainted. Indeed, I ſignified my doubts on that ſcore to Mr. B——, who would have attended his kinſman to the field, had he not thought he might be liable to cenſure, if any thing ſhould happen to Lord B——, becauſe he himſelf was heir at law: for that reaſon he judiciouſly declined being perſonally concerned; and we pitched upon the Earl of A——, his lordſhip's uncle, who willingly undertook the office.

'At the appointed time they went to the place of rendezvous, where they had not waited long when the challenger appeared, in a new pink ſattin waiſtcoat, which he had put on for the occaſion, with his ſword under his arm, and his ſteward by him, leaving, in an hackney-coach, at ſome diſtance a ſurgeon whom he had provided for the care of his perſon. Thus equipped, he advanced to his antagoniſt, and deſired him to chuſe his ground; upon which Lord B—— told him, that if he muſt fall, it was not material which grave he ſhould tumble over.

'Our little hero finding him ſo jocoſe and determined, turned to Lord A——, and deſired to ſpeak with him, that he might diſburden his conſcience, before they ſhould begin the work of death. They accordingly went aſide; and he gave him to underſtand, that his motive for fighting was Lord B——'s detaining

ing his wife from him by compulsion. The Earl of A—— assured him he was egregiously mistaken in his conjecture; that his nephew used no force or undue influence to keep me in his house; but it could not be expected that he would turn me out of doors.

'This explanation was altogether satisfactory to Lord ——, who said he was far from being so unreasonable as to expect Lord B—— would commit such a breach of hospitality; and all he desired was, that his wife should be left to her own inclinations. Upon these articles, peace was concluded, and they parted without bloodshed. At least, these are the particulars of the story, as they were related by Lord A——, with whom I laughed heartily at the adventure, for I never doubted that the challenger would find some expedient to prevent the duel, though I wondered how he mustered up resolution enough to carry it so far.

'That he might not, however, give us any more trouble, we resolved to go and enjoy ourselves in France; whither I went by myself, in hopes of being soon joined by my lover, who was obliged to stay some time longer in England, to settle his affairs. He was so much affected at our parting (though but a few weeks) that he was almost distracted: and this affliction renewed my tenderness for him, because it was an undoubted proof of his love. I wrote to him every post from France; and, as I had no secrets, desired him to take care of all the letters that should come to his house, directed to me, after my departure from England.

'This was an unfortunate office for him, in the execution of which he chanced to open a letter from Sir T—— A——, with whom (as I have already observed) I had some correspondence at Bath. I had, according to my promise, given this gentleman a decisive answer, importing, that I was determined to remain in my present situation; but as Lord B—— was ignorant of my sentiments in that particular, and perceived from the letter that something extraordinary had passed between us, and that I was

earneſtly ſolicited to leave him, he was ſeized with the utmoſt conſternation and concern; and having previouſly obtained the king's leave to go abroad, ſet out that very night for France, leaving his affairs in the greateſt confuſion.

'Sir T—— A—— hearing I was gone, without underſtanding the cauſe of my departure, took the ſame route, and both arrived at Dover next day.

'They heard of each other's motions; each bribed the maſter of a packet-boat to tranſport him with expedition; but that depending upon the wind, both reached Calais at the ſame time, though in different veſſels. Sir T—— ſent his valet de chambre, poſt, with a letter, intreating me to accompany him into Italy, where he would make me miſtreſs of his whole fortune, and to ſet out directly for that country, that he might not loſe me by the arrival of Lord B——, promiſing to join me on the road, if I would conſent to make him happy. I ſent his meſſenger back with an anſwer, wherein I expreſſed ſurprize at his propoſals, after having ſignified my reſolution to him before I left England. He was ſcarce diſmiſſed, when I received another letter from Lord B——, beſeeching me to meet him at Clermont, upon the road from Calais; and conjuring me to avoid the ſight of his rival, ſhould he get the ſtart of him in travelling. This, however, was not likely to be the caſe, as Lord B—— rode poſt, and the other was, by his corpulence, obliged to travel in a chaiſe; yet, that I might not increaſe his anxiety, I left Paris immediately on the receipt of his meſſage, and met him at the appointed place; where he received me with all the agitation of joy and fear, and aſked if I had ever encouraged Sir T—— A—— in his addreſſes. I very candidly told him the whole tranſaction, at which he was incenſed; but his indignation was ſoon appeaſed, when I profeſſed my penitence, and aſſured him that I had totally rejected his rival. Not that I approved of my behaviour to Sir T——, who (I own) was ill uſed in

in this affair; but surely it was more excusable to halt here, than proceed farther in my indiscretion.

'My lover being satisfied with my declaration, we went together to Paris, being attended by the Scotchman whom I have already mentioned; though I believe he was not over and above well pleased to see matters thus amicably compromised. The furious knight followed us to the capital; insisted on seeing me in person; told this North Briton, that I was actually engaged to him; wrote every hour, and railed at my perfidious conduct. I took no notice of these delirious transports, which were also disregarded by Lord B——, till one night he was exasperated by the insinuations of Mr. C——, who, I believe, inflamed his jealousy, by hinting a suspicion that I was really in love with his rival. What passed betwixt them I know not, but he sent for me from the opera, by a physician of Paris, who was a sort of go-between among us all, and who told me, that if I did not come home on the instant, a duel would be fought on my account.

'I was very much shocked at this information; but by being used to alarms from the behaviour of Lord ——, I had acquired a pretty good share of resolution, and with great composure entered the room where Lord B—— was, with his companion, whom I immediately ordered to withdraw. I then gave his lordship to understand, that I was informed of what had passed, and thought myself so much injured by the person who had just quitted the apartment, that I would no longer live under the same roof with him.

'Lord B—— raved like a bedlamite, taxing me with want of candour and affection; but I easily justified my own integrity, and gave him such assurances of my love, that his jealousy subsided, and his spirits were recomposed. Nevertheless, I insisted upon his dismissing Mr. C——, on pain of my leaving the house, as I cold not help thinking he had used his endeavours to prejudice me in the opinion of my lord. If his conduct was the result of friendship for his patron, he cer-
 tainly

tainly acted the part of an honeſt and truſty adherent. But I could not eaſily forgive him, becauſe a few weeks before, he had, by my intereſt, obtained a conſiderable addition to his allowance; and even after the ſteps he had taken to diſoblige me, I was not ſo much his enemy but that I prevailed upon Lord B—— to double his ſalary, that his leaving the family might be o detriment to his fortune.

'His lordſhip having complied with my demand, this gentleman, after having ſtayed three days in the houſe to prepare for his departure, during which I would not ſuffer him to be admitted into my preſence, made his retreat with a fine young girl who was my companion, and I have never ſeen him ſince that time.

'Sir T—— ſtill continued furious, and would not take a denial, except from my own mouth; upon which, with the approbation of Lord B——, I indulged him with an interview. He entered the apartment with a ſtern countenance, and told me I had uſed him ill. I pleaded guilty to the charge, and begged his pardon accordingly. I attempted to reaſon the caſe with him, but he would have no arguments except his own, and even tried to intimidate me with threats; which provoked me to ſuch a degree, that I defied his vengeance. I told him that I feared nothing but the report of my own conſcience; that though I had acted a ſimple part, he durſt not ſay there was any thing criminal in my conduct; and that from his preſent frantick and unjuſt behaviour, I thought myſelf happy in having eſcaped him. He ſwore I was the moſt inflexible of all creatures, aſked it nothing would move me; and when I anſwered "Nothing," took his leave, and never after perſecuted me with his addreſſes: though I have heard he was vain and falſe enough to boaſt of favours, which, upon my honour, he never received; as he himſelf, at one time, owned to Doctor Cantwell at Paris.

'While he underwent all this frenzy and diſtraction upon my account, he was loved with the ſame violence

of paſſion by a certain Scotch lady of quality; who, when he followed me to France, purſued him thither with the ſame eagerneſs and expedition. Far from being jealous of me as a rival, ſhe uſed to come to my houſe, implore my good offices with the object of her love, and laying herſelf on the floor at full length before the fire, weep and cry like a perſon bereft of her ſenſes. She bitterly complained, that he had never obliged her but once; and begged, with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that I would give her an opportunity of ſeeing him at my houſe. But I thought proper to avoid her company, as ſoon as I perceived her intention.

'We continued at Paris for ſome time, during which I contracted an acquaintance with the ſiſter of Madam la T——. She was the ſuppoſed miſtreſs of the Prince of C——, endowed with a great ſhare of underſtanding, and loved pleaſure to exceſs, though ſhe maintained her reputation on a reſpectable footing, by living with her huſband and mother. This lady perceiving that I had inſpired her lover with a paſſion, which gave me uneaſineſs on her account, actually practiſed all her eloquence and art, in perſuading me to liſten to his love; for it was a maxim with her, to pleaſe him at any rate. I was ſhocked at her indelicate compliance, and rejected the propoſal, as repugnant to my preſent engagement, which I held as ſacred as any nuptial tie, and much more binding than a forced or unnatural marriage.

'Upon our return to England, we lived in great harmony and peace; and nothing was wanting to my happineſs, but the one thing to me the moſt needful; I mean the enchanting tenderneſs and delightful enthuſiaſm of love. Lord B——'s heart (I believe) felt the ſoft impreſſions; and for my own part, I loved him with the moſt faithful affection. It is not enough to ſay I wiſhed him well; I had the moſt delicate, the moſt genuine eſteem for his virtue; I had an intimate regard and anxiety for his intereſt; and felt for him as if he had been my own ſon: but ſtill there was a vacancy in my heart; there was not that fervour, that tranſport,

that extaſy of paſſion which I had formerly known; my boſom was not filled with the little deity; I could not help recalling to my remembrance the fond, the raviſhing moments, I had paſſed with S——. Had I underſtood the conditions of life, thoſe pleaſures were happily exchanged for my preſent ſituation; becauſe, if I was now deprived of thoſe rapturous enjoyments, I was alſo exempted from the cares and anxiety that attended them; but I was generally extravagant in my notions of happineſs, and therefore conſtrued my preſent tranquillity into an inſipid languor and ſtagnation of life.

'While I remained in this inactivity of ſentiment, Lord ——, having received a very conſiderable addition to his fortune, ſent a meſſage to me, promiſing, that if I would leave Lord B——, he would make me a preſent of a houſe and furniture, where I ſhould live at my eaſe, without being expoſed to his viſits, except when I ſhould be diſpoſed to receive them. This propoſal he made in conſequence of what I had always declared, namely, that if he had not reduced me to the neceſſity of putting myſelf under the protection of ſome perſon or other, by depriving me of any other means of ſubſiſtence, I ſhould never have given the leaſt cauſe to ſcandalize my reputation; and that I would withdraw myſelf from my preſent dependance, as ſoon as he ſhould enable me to live by myſelf. I was therefore reſolved to be as good as my word, and accepted his offer, on condition that I ſhould be wholly at my own diſpoſal, and that he ſhould never enter my door but as a viſitant or common friend.

'Theſe articles being ratified by his word and honour (the value of which I did not then know) an houſe was furniſhed according to my directions; and I ſignified my intention to Lord B——, who conſented to my removal, with this proviſo, that I ſhould continue to ſee him. I wrote alſo to his relation Mr. B——, who, in his anſwer, obſerved, that it was too late to adviſe when I was actually determined. All my friends and acquaintance approved of the ſcheme,

though

though it was one of the moſt unjuſtifiable ſteps I had ever taken, being a real act of ingratitude to my benefactor; which I ſoon did, and always ſhall, regret and condemn. So little is the world qualified to judge of private affairs!

'When the time of our parting drew near, Lord B—— became gloomy and diſcontented, and even intreated me to poſtpone my reſolution; but I told him, that now every thing was prepared for my reception, I could not retract without incurring the imputation of folly and extravagance. On the very day of my departure, Mr. B—— endeavoured, with all the arguments he could ſuggeſt, to diſſuade me from my purpoſe; and I made uſe of the ſame anſwer which had ſatisfied his friend. Finding me determined upon removing, he burſt into a flood of tears, exclaiming, "By G—d, if Lord B—— can bear it, I can't!" I was thunderſtruck at this expreſſion; for though I had been told that Mr. B—— was in love with me, I gave no credit to the report, becauſe he had never declared his paſſion, and this was the firſt hint of it that ever eſcaped him in my hearing. I was therefore ſo much amazed at the circumſtance of this abrupt explanation, that I could make no anſwer; but having taken my leave, went away, ruminating on the unexpected declaration.

'Lord B—— (as I was informed) ſpoke not a word that whole night, and took my leaving him ſo much to heart, that two years elapſed before he got the better of his grief. This intelligence I afterwards received from his own mouth, and aſked his forgiveneſs for my unkind retreat, though I ſhall never be able to obtain my own. As for Mr. B——, he was overwhelmed with ſorrow, and made ſuch efforts to ſuppreſs his concern, as had well nigh coſt him his life. Dr. S—— was called to him in the middle of the night, and found him almoſt ſuffocated. He ſoon gueſſed the cauſe, when he underſtood that I had left the houſe: ſo that I myſelf was the only perſon concerned who was utterly ignorant

of

of his affection; for I solemly declare, he never gave me the least reason to suspect it while I lived with his relation, because he had too much honour to entertain a thought of supplanting his friend, and too good an opinion of me to believe he should have succeeded in the attempt. Though my love for Lord B—— was not so tender and interesting as the passion I had felt for S——, my fidelity was inviolable, and I never harboured the most distant thought of any other person, till after I had resolved to leave him, when (I own) I afforded some small encouragement to the addresses of a new admirer, by telling him, that I should, in a little time, be my own mistress, though I was not now at my own disposal.

'I enjoyed my own house as a little paradise: it was accommodated with all sorts of conveniences; every thing was new, and therefore pleasing, and the whole absolutely at my command. I had the company of a relation, a very good woman, with whom I lived in the most amicable manner; was visited by the best people in town, (I mean those of the male sex, the ladies having long ago forsaken me;) I frequented all reputable places of public entertainment, and had a concert at home once a week; so that my days rolled on in happiness and quiet, till all my sweets were imbittered by the vexatious behaviour of my husband, who began to importune me again to live with him; and by the increasing anxiety of Lord B——, who (though I still admitted his visits) plainly perceived that I wanted to relinquish his correspondence. This discovery raised such tempests of jealousy and despair within his breast, that he kept me in continual alarms: he sent messages to me every hour, signed his letters with his own blood, raved like a man in an extasy of madness, railed at my ingratitude, and praised my conduct by turns. He offered to sacrifice every thing for my love, to leave the kingdom forthwith, and live with me for ever in any part of the world where I should chuse to reside.

'These were generous and tempting proposals; but I was

I was beset with counsellors who were not totally disinterested, and who dissuaded me from embracing the profers of my lover, on pretence that Lord —— would be highly injured by my compliance. I listened to their advice, and hardened my heart against Lord B——'s sorrow and solicitations. My behaviour on this occasion is altogether unaccountable; this was the only time that ever I was a slave to admonition. The condition of Lord B—— would have melted any heart but mine, and yet mine was one of the most sensible: he employed his cousin as an advocate with me, till that gentleman actually refused the office, telling him candidly, that his own inclinations were too much engaged to permit him to perform the task with fidelity and truth. He accordingly resolved to avoid my presence, until my lord and I should come to some final determination, which was greatly retarded by the perseverance of his lordship, who would not resign his hopes, even when I pretended that another man had engaged my heart, but said, that in time my affection might return.

'Our correspondence, however, gradually wore off; upon which Mr. B—— renewed his visits, and many agreeable and happy hours we passed together. Not that he, or any other person whom I now saw, succeeded to the privilege of a fortunate lover: I knew he loved me to madness; but I would not gratify his passion any other way than by the most profound esteem and veneration for his virtues, which were altogether amiable and sublime; and I would here draw his character minutely, but it would take up too much time to set forth his merits; the only man living of my acquaintance who resembles him is Lord F——, of whom I shall speak in the sequel.

'About this time, I underwent a very interesting change in the situation of my heart. I had sent a message to my old lover S——, desiring he would allow my picture, which was in his possession, to be copied; and he now transmitted it to me by my lawyer, whom

he directed to aſk, if I intended to be at the next maſquerade. This curioſity had a ſtrange effect upon my ſpirits; my heart fluttered at the queſtion, and my imagination glowed with a thouſand fond preſages. I anſwered in the affirmative, and we met by accident at the ball. I could not behold him without emotion; when he accoſted me, his well-known voice made my heart vibrate, like a muſical chord, when it's uniſon is ſtruck. All the ideas of our paſt love, which the lapſe of time and abſence had enfeebled and lulled to ſleep, now awoke, and were re-inſpired by his appearance; ſo that his artful excuſes were eaſily admitted: I forgave him all that I had ſuffered on his account, becauſe he was the natural lord of my affection; and our former correſpondence was renewed.

'I thought myſelf in a new world of bliſs, in conſequence of this reconciliation, the raptures of which continued unimpaired for the ſpace of four months; during which time he was fonder of me, if poſſible, than before; repeated his promiſe of marriage, if we ſhould ever have it in our power; aſſured me he had never been happy ſince he left me; that he believed no man had ever loved like me; and, indeed, to have a notion of my paſſion for that man, you muſt firſt have loved as I did: but through a ſtrange caprice, I broke off the correſpondence, out of apprehenſion that he would forſake me again. From his paſt conduct, I dreaded what might happen; and the remembrance of what I had undergone by his inconſiſtency, filled my imagination with ſuch horror, that I could not endure the ſhocking proſpect, and prematurely plunged myſelf into the danger, rather than endure the terrors of expectation. I remembered that his former attachment began in the ſeaſon of my proſperity, when my fortune was in the zenith, and my youth in it's prime; and that he had forſaken me in the day of trouble, when my life became embarraſſed, and my circumſtances were on the decline: I foreſaw nothing but continual perſecution from my huſband, and feared, that if once the keener

tranſports of our reconciliation ſhould be over, his affection would ſink under the ſeverity of it's trial. In conſequence of this deſertion, I received a letter from him, acknowledging that he was rightly ſerved, but that my retreat gave him inexpreſſible concern.

'Meanwhile, Lord —— continued to act in the character of a fiend, tormenting me with his nauſeous importunities: he prevailed upon the Duke of L—— to employ his influence in perſuading me to live with him; aſſuring his grace, that I had actually promiſed to give him that proof of my obedience, and that I would come home the ſooner for being preſſed to compliance by a perſon of his rank and character. Induced by theſe repreſentations, the duke honoured me with a viſit; and in the courſe of his exhortations I underſtood how he had been thus miſinformed: upon which I ſent for Lord ——, and in his preſence convicted him of the falſhood, by communicating to his grace the article of our laſt agreement, which he did not think proper to deny; and the duke being undeceived, declared that he would not have given me the trouble of vindicating myſelf, had he not been miſled by the inſincerity of my lord.

'Baffled in this attempt, he engaged Mr. H—— V——, and afterwards my own father, in the ſame taſk; and though I ſtill adhered to my firſt reſolution, perſiſted with ſuch obſtinacy in his endeavours to make me unhappy, that I determined to leave the kingdom. Accordingly, after I had ſpent the evening with him at Ranelagh, I went away about two o'clock in the morning, leaving my companion, with directions to reſtore to my lord his houſe, furniture, plate, and every thing he had given me ſince our laſt accommodation; ſo far was I, upon this occaſion, or at any other time of my life, from embezzling any part of his fortune. My friend followed my inſtructions moſt punctually; and his lordſhip knows and will acknowledge the truth of this aſſertion.

'Thus have I explained the true cauſe of my firſt

expedition to Flanders, whither the world was good-natured enough to ſay I followed Mr. B—— and the whole army, which happened to be ſent abroad that ſummer. Before my departure, I likewiſe tranſmitted to Lord B—— the dreſſing-plate, china, and a very conſiderable ſettlement, of which he had been generous enough to make me a preſent. This was an inſtance of my integrity, which I thought due to a man who had laid me under great obligations; and though I have lived to be refuſed a ſmall ſum both by him and S——, I do not repent of my diſintereſted behaviour; all the revenge I harbour againſt the laſt of theſe lovers, is the deſire of having it in my power to do him good.

'I now found myſelf adrift in the world again, and very richly deſerved the hardſhips of my condition, for my indiſcretion in leaving Lord B——, and in truſting to the word of Lord ——, without ſome farther ſecurity; but I have dearly paid for my imprudence. The more I ſaw into the character of this man, whom deſtiny hath appointed my ſcourge, the more was I determined to avoid his fellowſhip and communication; for he and I are, in point of diſpoſition, as oppoſite as any two principles in nature. In the firſt place, he is one of the moſt unſocial beings that ever exiſted: when I was pleaſed and happy, he was always out of temper; but if he could find means to overcaſt and cloud my mirth, though never ſo innocent, he then diſcovered ſigns of uncommon ſatisfaction and content; becauſe, by this diſagreeable temper, he baniſhed all company from his houſe. He is extremely weak of underſtanding, though he poſſeſſes a good ſhare of low cunning, which has ſo egregiouſly impoſed upon ſome people, that they have actually believed him a good-natured eaſy creature, and blamed me becauſe I did not manage him to better purpoſe; but, upon farther acquaintance, they have always found him obſtinate as a mule, and capricious as a monkey. Not that he is utterly void of all commendable qualities: he is punctual in paying his debts, liberal when in good-humour,

and

and would be well bred, were he not ſubject to fits of abſence, during which he is altogether unconverſable; but he is proud, naturally ſuſpicious, jealous, equally with and without cauſe, never made a friend, and is an utter ſtranger to the joys of intimacy; in ſhort, he hangs like a damp upon ſociety, and may be properly called *kill joy*, an epithet which he has juſtly acquired. He honours me with conſtant profeſſions of love, but his conduct is ſo oppoſite to my ſentiments of that paſſion, as to have been the prime ſource of all my misfortunes and affliction; and I have often wiſhed myſelf the object of his hate, in hopes of profiting by a change in his behaviour.

'Indeed, he has not been able to make me more unhappy than, I believe, he is in his own mind; for he is literally a ſelf-tormentor, who never enjoyed one gleam of ſatisfaction, except at the expence of another's quiet; and yet with this (I had almoſt called it diabolical) quality, he expects that I ſhould cheriſh him with all the tenderneſs of affection. After he has been at pains to incur my averſion, he puniſhes my diſguſt, by contriving ſchemes to mortify and perplex me, which have often ſucceeded ſo effectually, as to endanger my life and conſtitution; for I have been fretted and frighted into ſundry fits of illneſs, and then I own I have experienced his care and concern.

'Over and above the oddities I have mentioned, he is ſo unſteady in his œconomy, that he is always new-modelling his affairs, and exhauſting his fortune, by laying out ten pounds in order to ſave a ſhilling. He enquires into the character of a ſervant after he has lived two years in his family; and is ſo ridiculouſly ſtocked with vanity and ſelf-conceit, that notwithſtanding my aſſurance before, and the whole ſeries of my conduct ſince our marriage, which ought to have convinced him of my diſlike, he is ſtill perſuaded, that at bottom I muſt admire and be enamoured of his agreeable perſon and accompliſhments, and that I would not fail to manifeſt my love, were I not ſpirited up againſt

 him

him by his own relations. Perhaps it might be their interest to foment the misunderstanding betwixt us, but really they give themselves no trouble about our affairs; and, so far as I know them, are a very good sort of people. On the whole, I think I may with justice pronounce my precious yoke-fellow a trifling, teazing, insufferable, inconsistent creature.

'With the little money which remained of what I had received from his lordship for housekeeping, I transported myself to Flanders, and arrived in Ghent a few days after our troops were quartered in that city, which was so much crouded with these new visitants, that I should have found it impracticable to procure a lodging, had I not been accommodated by Lord R—— B——, the Duke of A——'s youngest brother, who very politely gave me up his own. Here I saw my friend Mr. B——, who was overjoyed at my arrival, though jealous of every man of his acquaintance; for he loved me with all the ardour of passion, and I regarded him with all the perfection of friendship, which, had he lived, might in time have produced love; though that was a fruit which it never brought forth. Notwithstanding his earnest solicitations to the contrary, I stayed but a week in Ghent, from whence I proceeded to Brussels, and fixed my abode in the Hotel de Flandre, among an agreeable set of gentlemen and ladies, with whom I spent my time very chearfully. There was a sort of court in this city, frequented by all the officers who could obtain permission to go thither; and the place in general was gay and agreeable. I was introduced to the best families, and very happy in my acquaintance, for the ladies were polite, good-tempered, and obliging, and treated me with the utmost hospitality and respect. Among others, I contracted a friendship with Madam la Comtesse de C——, and her two daughters, who were very amiable young ladies; and became intimate with the Princess C——, and Countess W——, lady of the bed chamber to the Queen of Hungary, and a great favourite of the Governor Monsieur D'H——,

in whose house she lived with his wife, who was also a lady of a very engaging disposition.

'Soon after I had fixed my habitation in Brussels, the company at our hotel was increased by three officers, who professed themselves my admirers, and came from Ghent with a view of soliciting my love. This triumvirate consisted of the Scotch earl of ——, Lord R—— M——, and another young officer: the first was a man of a very genteel figure and amorous complexion, danced well, and had a great deal of good-humour, with a mixture of vanity and self-conceit; the second had a good face, though a clumsy person, and a very sweet disposition, very much adapted for the sentimental passion of love; and the third (Mr. W—— by name) was tall, thin, and well-bred, with a great stock of good-nature and vivacity. These adventurers began their addresses in general acts of gallantry, that comprehended several of my female friends, with whom we used to engage in parties of pleasure, both in the city and the environs, which are extremely agreeable. When they thought they had taken the preliminary steps of securing themselves in my good opinion and esteem, they agreed to go on without further delay, and that Lord —— should make the first attack upon my heart.

'He accordingly laid siege to me with such warmth and assiduity, that I believed he deceived himself, and began to think he was actually in love; though at bottom he felt no impulse that deserved the sacred name. Though I discouraged him in the beginning, he persecuted me with his addresses; he always sat by me at dinner, and imparted a thousand trifles in continual whispers, which attracted the notice of the company so much, that I began to fear his behaviour would give rise to some report to my prejudice; and therefore avoided him with the utmost caution. Notwithstanding all my care, however, he found means one night, while my maid, who lay in my room, went down stairs, to get into my chamber after I was a bed,

upon which I ſtarted up, and told him that if he ſhould approach me, I would alarm the houſe; for I never wanted courage and reſolution. Perceiving my diſpleaſure, he begged I would have pity on his ſufferings, and ſwore I ſhould have *carte blanche* to the utmoſt extent of his fortune. To theſe propoſals I made no other reply, but that of proteſting I would never ſpeak to him again, if he did not quit my apartment that moment; upon which he thought proper to withdraw; and I never afterwards gave him an opportunity of ſpeaking to me on the ſame ſubject: ſo that, in a few weeks, he ſeparated himſelf from our ſociety; though the ladies of Bruſſels, conſidered him as my lover, becauſe, of all the other officers, he was their greateſt favourite.

'His lordſhip being thus repulſed, Mr. W—— took the field, and aſſailed my heart in a very different manner. He ſaid he knew not how to make love, but was a man of honour, would keep the ſecret, and ſo forth. To this cavalier addreſs I anſwered, that I was not angry, as I otherwiſe ſhould have been at his blunt declaration, becauſe I found by his own confeſſion, he did not know what was due to the ſex; and my unhappy ſituation in ſome ſhape excuſed him for a liberty which he would not have dreamed of taking, had not my misfortunes encouraged his preſumption. But I would deal with him in his own way; and, far from aſſuming the prude, frankly aſſured him, that he was not at all to my taſte, hoping he would conſider my diſlike as a ſufficient reaſon to reject his love.

'Lord R—— began to feel the ſymptoms of a genuine paſſion, which he carefully cheriſhed in ſilence, being naturally diffident and baſhful; but by the very means he uſed to conceal it from my obſervation, I plainly diſcerned the ſituation of his heart, and was not at all diſpleaſed at the progreſs I had made in his inclinations. Meanwhile, he cultivated my acquaintance with great aſſiduity and reſpect, attended me in all my excurſions, and particularly in an expedition to Antwerp,

werp, with two other gentlemen, where in downright *gaieté de cœur* we ſat for our pictures, which were drawn in one piece; one of the party being repreſented in the dreſs of an huſſar, and another in that of a running footman. This incident I mention, becauſe the performance, which is now in my poſſeſſion, gave birth to a thouſand groundleſs reports, that circulated in England at our expence.

'It was immediately after this jaunt, that Lord R— began to diſcloſe his paſſion; though he, at the ſame time, ſtarted ſuch objections as ſeemed well nigh to extinguiſh his hopes, lamenting, that if he ſhould have the happineſs to engage my affections, his fortune was too inconſiderable to ſupport us againſt the efforts of Lord ——, ſhould he attempt to interrupt our felicity: and that he himſelf was obliged to follow the motions of the army. In ſhort, he ſeemed to conſider my felicity more than his own, and behaved with ſuch delicacy, as gradually made an impreſſion on my heart; ſo that when we parted, we agreed to renew our correſpondence in England.

'In the midſt of theſe agreeable amuſements, which I enjoyed in almoſt all the different parts of Flanders, I happened to be at Ghent one day, ſitting among a great deal of company, in one of their hotels, when a poſt chaiſe ſtopped at the gate; upon which we went to the windows to ſatisfy our curioſity, when who ſhould ſtep out of the convenience, but my little inſignificant lord. I no ſooner announced him to the company, than all the gentlemen aſked whether they ſhould ſtay and protect me, or withdraw; and when I aſſured them that their protection was not neceſſary, one and all of them retired; though Lord R—— M—— went no farther than the parlour below, being determined to ſcreen me againſt all violence and compulſion. I ſent a meſſage to my lord deſiring him to walk up into my apartment; but although his ſole errand was to ſee and carry me off, he would not venture to accept of my invitation,

vitation, till he had demanded me in form from the governor of the place.

'That gentleman being altogether a ſtranger to his perſon and character, referred him to the commanding officer of the Engliſh troops, who was a man of honour, and upon his lordſhip's application, pretended to doubt his identity; obſerving, that he had always heard Lord —— repreſented as a jolly corpulent man. He gave him to underſtand, however, that even granting him to be the perſon, I was by no means ſubject to military law, unleſs he could prove that I had ever liſted in his majeſty's ſervice.

'Thus diſappointed in his endeavours, he returned to the inn, and with much perſuaſion, truſted himſelf in my dining-room, after having ſtationed his attendant at the door, in caſe of accidents. When I aſked, what had procured me the honour of his viſit; he told me his buſineſs and intention were to carry me home. This declaration produced a conference, in which I argued the caſe with him; and matters were accommodated for the preſent, by my promiſing to be in England ſome time in September, on condition that he would permit me to live by myſelf, as before, and immediately order the arrears of my pin money to be paid. He aſſented to every thing I propoſed, returned in peace to his own country, and the deficiencies of my allowance were made good; while I returned to Bruſſels, where I ſtayed until my departure for England, which I regulated in ſuch a manner as was conſiſtent with my engagement.

'I took lodgings in Pall Mall, and ſending for my lord, convinced him of my punctuality, and put him in mind of his promiſe; when, to my utter aſtoniſhment and confuſion, he owned, that his promiſe was no more than a decoy to bring me over, and that I muſt lay my account with living in his houſe like a dutiful and obedient wife. I heard him with the indignation ſuch treatment deſerved, upbraiding him with his perfidious

dealing,

dealing, which I told him would have determined me againſt cohabitation with him, had I not been already reſolved: and being deſtitute of all reſource, repaired to Bath, where I afterwards met with Mr. D—— and Mr. R——, two gentlemen who had been my fellow-paſſengers in the yacht from Flanders, and treated me with great friendſhip and politeneſs, without either talking or thinking of love.

'With theſe gentlemen, who were as idle as myſelf, I went to the jubilee at Preſton, which was no other than a great number of people aſſembled in a ſmall town, extremely ill accommodated, to partake of diverſions that were bad imitations of plays, concerts, and maſquerades. If the world ſhould place to the account of my indiſcretion my travelling in this manner, with gentlemen to whom I had no particular attachment, let it alſo be conſidered, as an alleviation, that I always lived in terror of my lord, and conſequently was often obliged to ſhift my quarters; ſo that my finances being extremely ſlender, I ſtood the more in need of aſſiſtance and protection. I was, beſides, young, inconſiderate, and ſo ſimple, as to ſuppoſe the figure of an ugly man would always ſecure me from cenſure on his account: neither did I ever dream of any man's addreſſes, until he made an actual declaration of his love.

'Upon my return to Bath, I was again haraſſed by Lord ——, who came thither accompanied by my father, whom I was very glad to ſee, though he importuned me to comply with my huſband's deſire, and for the future keep meaſures with the world. This remonſtrance about living with my lord, which he conſtantly repeated, was the only inſtance of his unkindneſs which I ever felt. But all his admonitions were not of force ſufficient to ſhake my reſolution in that particular; though the debate continued ſo late, that I told his lordſhip, it was high time to retire, for I could not accommodate him with a bed. He then gave me to underſtand, that he would ſtay where he was;

upon

upon which my father took his leave, on pretence of looking out for a lodging for himſelf.

'The little gentleman being now left *tête à tête* with me, began to diſcover ſome ſigns of apprehenſion in his looks; but muſtering up all his reſolution, he went to the door, called up three of his ſervants, whom he placed as centinels upon the ſtair, and flounced into my elbow-chair, where he reſigned himſelf to reſt. Intending to go to bed, I thought it was but juſt and decent that I ſhould ſcreen myſelf from the intruſion of his footmen, and with that view bolted the door. Lord —— hearing himſelf locked in, ſtarted up in the utmoſt terror and conſternation, kicked the door with his heel, and ſcreamed aloud, as if he had been in the hands of an aſſaſſin. My father, who had not yet quitted the houſe, hearing theſe outcries, ran up ſtairs again, and coming through my bed-chamber into the dining-room, where we were, found me almoſt ſuffocated with laughter, and his heroick ſon-in-law ſtaring like one who had loſt his wits, with his hair ſtanding on end.

'When my father aſked the meaning of his exclamations, he told him with all the ſymptoms of diſmay, that I had locked him in, and he did not underſtand ſuch uſage; but I explained the whole myſtery, by ſaying, I had bolted the door, becauſe I did not like the company of his ſervants, and could not imagine the cauſe of his panick, unleſs he thought I deſigned to raviſh him: an inſult, than which nothing was farther from my intention. My father himſelf could ſcarce refrain from laughing at his ridiculous fear; but ſeeing him in great confuſion, took pity on his condition, and carried him off to his own lodgings, after I had given my word, that I would not attempt to eſcape, but give him audience next morning. I accordingly kept my promiſe, and found means to perſuade them to leave me at my own diſcretion. Next day I was rallied upon the ſtratagem I had contrived to frighten Lord —; and a thouſand idle ſtories were told about this adventure, which happened literally as I have related it.

'From

'From Bath I betook myself to a small house near Lincoln, which I had hired of the D— of A——, because a country life suited best with my income, which was no more than four hundred pounds a year, and that not well paid. I continued some months in this retirement, and saw no company except Lord R—M—, who lived in the neighbourhood, and visited me twice; till finding myself indisposed, I was obliged to remove to London, and took lodgings in Maddox Street, where my garrison was taken by storm, by my lord and his steward, reinforced by Mr. L—— V——, (who, as my lord told me, had a subsidy of five and twenty pounds, before he would take the field) and a couple of hardy footmen. This formidable band rushed into my apartment, laid violent hands upon me, dragged me down stairs without gloves or a cloak, and thrusting me into a coach that stood at the door, conveyed me to my lord's lodgings in Gloucester Street.

'Upon this occasion, his lordship courageously drew his sword upon my woman, who attempted to defend me from his insults, and in all probability would have intimidated him from proceeding, for he looked pale and aghast, his knees knocked together, and he breathed thick and hard, with his nostrils dilated, as if he had seen a ghost. But he was encouraged by his mercenary associate: who, for the five and twenty pounds, stood by him in the day of trouble, and spirited him on to this gallant enterprize.

'In consequence of this exploit, I was cooped in a paltry apartment in Gloucester Street, where I was close beset by his lordship, and his worthy steward Mr. H——, with a set of servants that were the creatures of this fellow, of whom Lord —— himself stood in awe; so that I could not help thinking myself in Newgate, among thieves and ruffians. To such a degree did my terror prevail, that I actually believed I was in danger of being poisoned, and would not receive any sustenance, except from the hands of one harmless looking fellow, a foreigner, who was my lord's valet de chambre.

chambre. I will not pretend to ſay my fears were juſt; but ſuch was my opinion of H——n, that I never doubted he would put me out of the way, if he thought my life interfered with his intereſt.

'On the ſecond day of my impriſonment, I was viſited by the Duke of L——, a friend of my lord; who found me ſitting upon a trunk, in a poor little dining room filled with lumber, and lighted with two bits of tallow candle, which had been left over-night. He perceived in my countenance a mixture of rage, indignation, terror, and deſpair; he compaſſionated my ſufferings, though he could not alleviate my diſtreſs, any other way than by interceding with my tyrant to mitigate my oppreſſion. Neverthele ſs, I remained eleven days in this comfortable ſituation: I was watched like a criminal all day, and one of the ſervants walked from one room to another all night, in the nature of a patrole: while my lord, who lay in the chamber above me, got out of bed, and tripped to the window, at the ſound of every coach that chanced to paſs through the ſtreet. H——n, who was conſummate in the arts of a ſycophant, began to court my favour, by condoling my affliction, and aſſuring me, that the only method by which I could regain my liberty, was a chearful compliance with the humour of my lord. I was fully convinced of the truth of this obſervation; and though my temper is altogether averſe to diſſimulation, attempted to affect an air of ſerenity and reſignation. But this diſguiſe, I found, would not anſwer my purpoſe; and therefore I had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of my maid, who was permitted to attend me in my confinement. With her I frequently conſulted about the means of accompliſhing my eſcape. In conſequence of our deliberations, ſhe directed a coach and ſix to be ready at a certain part of the town, and to wait for me three days in the ſame place, in caſe I could not come before the expiration of that term.

'This previous meaſure being taken according to my inſtructions, the next neceſſary ſtep was ſo elude

the

the vigilance of my guard; and in this manner did I effectuate my purpose. Being, by this time, indulged in the liberty of going out in the coach, for the benefit of the air, attended by two footmen, who had orders to watch all my motions, I made use of this privilege one forenoon, when Lord —— expected some company to dinner, and bade the coachman drive to the lodgings of a man who wrote with his mouth, intending to give my spies the slip, on pretence of seeing this curiosity; but they were too alert in their duty to be thus outwitted, and followed me up stairs into the very apartment.

'Disappointed in this hope, I revolved another scheme, which was attended with success; I bought some olives at an oil-shop; and telling the servants I would proceed to St James's gate, and take a turn in the park, broke one of the bottles by the way, complained of the misfortune when I was set down, and desired that my coach might be cleaned before my return. While my attendants were employed in this office, I tripped across the parade to the Horse Guards, and chanced to meet with an acquaintance in the Park, who said, he saw by my countenance that I was upon some expedition. I owned his suspicion was just; but, as I had not time to relate particulars, I quickened my pace, and took possession of a hackney-coach, in which I proceeded to the vehicle which I had appointed to be in waiting.

'While I thus compassed my escape, there was nothing but perplexity and confusion at home; dinner was delayed till six o'clock: my lord ran half the town over in quest of his equipage, which at last returned with an account of my elopement. My maid was brought to the question, and grievously threatened; but (like all the women I ever had) remained unshaken in her fidelity. In the mean time, I travelled night and day towards my retreat in Lincolnshire, of which his lordship had not, as yet, got the least intelligence; and as my coachman was but an unexperienced driver, I

was

was obliged to make ufe of my own fkill in that exercife, and direct his endeavours the whole way, without venturing to go to bed, or take the leaft repofe, until I reached my own habitation. There I lived in peace and tranquillity for the fpace of fix weeks, when I was alarmed by one of my lord's myrmidons, who came into the neighbourhood, bluftering and fwearing, that he would carry me off, either dead or alive.

'It is not to be fuppofed that I was perfectly eafy when I was made acquainted with his purpofe and declaration, as my whole family confifted of no more than a couple of women and one footman. However, I fummoned up my courage, which had been often tried, and never forfook me in the day of danger, and fent him word, that if ever he fhould prefume to approach my houfe, I would order him to be fhot without ceremony. The fellow did not chufe to put me to the trial, and returned to town without his errand. But as the place of my abode was now difcovered, I laid my account with having a vifit from his employer: I therefore planted fpies upon the road, with a promife of reward to him who fhould bring me the firft intelligence of his lordfhip's approach.

'Accordingly, I was one morning apprized of his coming; and mounting horfe immediately, with my woman and valet, away we rode, in defiance of winter. In two days I traverfed the wilds of Lincolnfhire and hundreds of Effex; croffed the river at Tilbury; breakfafted at Chatham; by the help of a guide and moonlight arrived at Dover the fame evening; embarked for Calais, in which place I found myfelf next day at two o'clock in the afternoon; and being heartily tired of my journey, betook myfelf to reft. My maid, who was not able to travel with fuch expedition, followed me at an eafier pace; and the footman was fo aftonifhed at my perfeverance, that he could not help afking upon the road, if ever I was weary in my life. Certain it is, my fpirits and refolution have enabled me to undergo fatigues that are almoft incredible. From Calais

lais I went to Bruſſels, where I again ſet up my reſt in private lodgings; was again perfectly well received by the faſhionable people of that place: and, by the intereſt of my friends, obtained the Queen of Hungary's protection againſt the perſecution of my huſband, while I remained in the Auſtrian Netherlands.

'Thus ſecured, I lived uncenſured, converſing with the Engliſh company, with which this city was crouded, but ſpent the moſt agreeable part of my time with the Counteſs of Calemberg, in whoſe houſe I generally dined and ſupped; and I alſo contracted an intimacy with the Princeſs of Chemay, who was a great favourite with Madam D'Harrach, the governor's lady.

'I had not been long in this happy ſituation, when I was diſturbed by the arrival of Lord ——, who demanded me of the governor; but finding me ſheltered from his power, he ſet out for Vienna: and, in conſequence of his repreſentations, ſtrengthened with the Duke of N——'s name, my protection was withdrawn. But, before this application, he had gone to the camp, and addreſſed himſelf to Lord Stair, who was my particular friend and ally by my firſt marriage, deſiring he would compel me to return to his houſe. His lordſhip told him that I was in no ſhape ſubject to his command; but invited him to dinner, with a view of diverting himſelf and company at the expence of his gueſt. In the evening he was plied with ſo many bumpers to my health, that he became intoxicated, and extremely obſtreperous; inſiſted upon ſeeing Lord Stair after he had retired to reſt, and quarrelled with Lord D———, who being a tall, large, raw-boned Scotchman, could have ſwallowed him at one mouthful; but he thought he might venture to challenge him, in hopes of being put under arreſt by the general: though he reckoned without his hoſt; Lord Stair knew his diſpoſition, and, in order to puniſh his preſumption, winked at the affair. The challenger, finding himſelf miſtaken in his conjecture, got up early in the morning, and went off poſt to Vienna; and Lord Stair deſired a certain man

of quality to make me a viſit, and give me an account of his behaviour.

'Being now deprived of my protection and pin-money, which my generous huſband would no longer pay, I was reduced to great difficulty and diſtreſs. The Ducheſs D'Aremberg, Lord G——, and many other perſons of diſtinction, interceded in my behalf with his majeſty, who was then abroad; but he refuſed to interpoſe between man and wife. The Counteſs of Calemberg wrote a letter to my father, in which ſhe repreſented my uncomfortable ſituation, and undertook to anſwer for my conduct, in caſe he would allow me a ſmall annuity, on which I could live independent of Lord ——, who, by all accounts was a wretch with whom I could never enjoy the leaſt happineſs or quiet; otherwiſe ſhe would be the firſt to adviſe me to an accommodation. She gave him to underſtand, that her character was neither doubtful nor obſcure; and that if my conduct there had not been irreproachable, ſhe ſhould not have taken me under her protection: that as I propoſed to board in a convent, a ſmall ſum would anſwer my occaſions; but, if that ſhould be denied, I would actually go to ſervice, or take ſome other deſperate ſtep, to avoid the man who was my bane and averſion.

'To this kind remonſtrance my father anſwered, that his fortune would not allow him to aſſiſt me; he had now a young family; and that I ought at all events, to return to my huſband. By this time ſuch was the extremity of my circumſtances, that I was forced to pawn my cloaths, and every trifling trinket in my poſſeſſion, and even to deſcend ſo far as to ſolicit Mr. S—— for a loan of fifty pounds, which he refuſed.

'Thus was I deſerted, in my diſtreſs, by two perſons to whom, in the ſeaſon of my affluence, my purſe had been always open. Nothing ſo effectually ſubdues a ſpirit unuſed to ſupplicate, as want! Repulſed in this manner, I had recourſe to Lord B——, who was alſo (it ſeems) unable to relieve my neceſſities.

This mortification I deserved at his hands, though he had once put it in my power to be above all paltry applications; and I should not have been compelled to the disagreeable task of troubling my friends, had not I voluntarily resigned what he formerly gave me. As to the other gentleman to whom I addressed myself on this occasion, I think he might have shewn more regard to my situation, not only for the reasons already mentioned, but because he knew me too well, to be ignorant of what I must have suffered, in condescending to make such a request.

'Several officers, who guessed my adversity, generously offered to supply me with money; but I could not bring myself to make use of their friendship, or even to own my distress, except to one person, of whom I borrowed a small sum. To crown my misfortunes, I was taken very ill, at a time when there was no other way of avoiding the clutches of my persecutor, but by a precipitate flight. In this emergency, I applied to a worthy gentleman at Brussels, a very good friend of mine, but no lover. I say, no lover, because every man is supposed to act in that capacity who befriends a young woman in distress. This generous Fleming set out with me in the night from Brussels, and conducted me to the frontiers of France. Being very much indisposed both in mind and body when I was obliged to undertake this expedition, I should, in all probability, have sunk under the fatigue of travelling, had not my spirits been kept up by the conversation of my companion, who was a man of business and consequence, and undertook to manage my affairs in such a manner as would enable me to re-establish my residence in the place I had left. He was young and active, attended me with the utmost care and assiduity, and left nothing undone which he thought would contribute to my ease and satisfaction. I believe his friendship for me was a little tinctured with another passion; but he was married, and lived very well with his wife, who was also my friend: so that he

knew I would never think of him in the light of a lover.

'Upon our arrival at Valenciennes, he accommodated me with a little money (for a little was all I would take) and returned to his own city, after we had settled a correspondence by letters. I was detained a day or two in this place by my indisposition, which increased; but nevertheless proceeded to Paris, to make interest for a protection from the King of France, which that monarch graciously accorded me, in three days after my first application; and his minister sent orders to all the governors and intendants of the province towns, to protect me against the efforts of Lord ——, in whatever place I should chuse to reside.

'Having returned my thanks at Versailles for this favour, and tarried a few days at Paris, which was a place altogether unsuitable to the low ebb of my fortune, I repaired to Lisle, where I intended to fix my habitation: and there my disorder recurred with such violence, that I was obliged to send for a physician, who seemed to have been a disciple of Sangrado; for he scarce left a drop of blood in my body, and yet I found myself never a whit the better. Indeed, I was so much exhausted by these evacuations, and my constitution so much impaired by fatigue and perturbation of mind, that I had no other hope of recovering but that of reaching England, and putting myself under the direction of a physician on whose ability I could depend.

'With this doubtful prospect, therefore, I determined to attempt a return to my native air, and actually departed from Lisle, in such a melancholy and feeble condition, that I had almost fainted when I was put into the coach. But before I resolved upon this journey I was reduced to the utmost exigence of fortune; so that I could scarce afford to buy provisions, had it been in my power to eat, and should not have been able to defray my travelling expences, had I not been generously befriended by Lord R—— M——,

who

who (I am ſure) would have done any thing for my eaſe and accommodation, though he has unjuſtly incurred the imputation of being parſimonious, and I had no reaſon to expect any ſuch favour at his hands.

'In this deplorable ſtate of health I was conveyed to Calais, being all the way (as it were) in the arms of death, without having ſwallowed the leaſt ſuſtenance on the road. So much was my indiſpoſition augmented by the journey, that I ſwooned when I was brought into the inn, and had almoſt expired before I could receive the leaſt aſſiſtance or advice; however, my ſpirits were a little revived by ſome bread and wine, which I took at the perſuaſion of a French ſurgeon, who chancing to paſs by the door, was called up to my relief. Having ſent my ſervant to Bruſſels, to take care of my cloaths, I embarked in the packet-boat, and by that time we arrived at Dover, was almoſt in extremity.

'Here I found a return coach, in which I was carried to London, and was put to bed in the houſe where we put up, more dead than alive. The people of the inn ſent for an apothecary, who adminiſtered ſome cordial that recalled me to life; and when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him who I was, and deſired him to wait upon Dr. S—— and inform him of my ſituation. A young girl, who was niece to the landlord's wife, ſeeing me unattended, made a tender of her ſervice to me, and I accepted the offer, as well as of a lodging in the apothecary's houſe, to which I was conveyed as ſoon as my ſtrength would admit of my removal. There I was viſited by my phyſician, who was ſhocked to find me in ſuch a dangerous condition: however, having conſidered my caſe, he perceived that my indiſpoſition proceeded from the calamities I had undergone, and encouraged me with a hope of a ſpeedy cure, provided I could be kept eaſy and undiſturbed.

'I was accordingly attended with all imaginable care, my lord's name being never mentioned in my hearing, becauſe I conſidered him as the fatal ſource of all my misfortunes; and in a month I recovered my health, by

the great ſkill and tenderneſs of my doctor, who now finding me ſtrong enough to encounter freſh troubles, endeavoured to perſuade me, that it would be my wiſeſt ſtep to return to my huſband, whom, at that time, he had often occaſion to ſee. But I rejected his propoſal, commenced a new law-ſuit for ſeparation, and took a ſmall houſe in St. James's Square.

'About this time, my woman returned from Bruſſels, but without my cloaths, which were detained on account of the money I owed in that place; and aſking her diſmiſſion from my ſervice, ſet up ſhop for herſelf. I had not lived many weeks in my new habitation, when my perſecutor renewed his attempts to make himſelf maſter of my perſon: but I had learned from experience to redouble my vigilance, and he was fruſtrated in all his endeavours. I was again happy in the converſation of my former acquaintance, and viſited by a great number of gentlemen, moſtly perſons of probity and ſenſe, who cultivated my friendſhip, without any other motive of attachment. Not that I was unſolicited on the article of love: that was a theme on which I never wanted orators; and could I have prevailed upon myſelf to profit by the advances that were made, I might have managed my opportunities, ſo as to have ſet fortune at defiance for the future. But I was none of thoſe œconomiſts, who can ſacrifice their hearts to intereſted conſiderations.

'One evening, while I was converſing with three or four of my friends, my lawyer came in, and told me he had ſomething of conſequence to impart: upon which all the gentlemen but one went away. Then he gave me to underſtand, that my ſuit would immediately come to trial; and though he hoped the beſt, the iſſue was uncertain; that if it ſhould be given againſt me, the deciſion would inſpire my lord with freſh ſpirits to diſturb my peace; and therefore it would be convenient for me to retire, until the affair ſhould be brought to a determination.

'I was very much diſconcerted at this intelligence;
and

and the gentleman who ſtayed perceiving my concern, aſked what I intended to do, or if he could ſerve me in any ſhape, and deſired to know whither I propoſed to retreat. I affected to laugh, and anſwered, "To a garret, I believe!" To this over-ſtrained raillery he replied, that if I ſhould, his friendſhip and regard would find the way to my apartment: and I had no reaſon to doubt the ſincerity of his declaration. We conſulted about the meaſures I ſhould take, and I determined to remove into the country, where I was ſoon favoured with a letter from him, wherein he expreſſed the infinite pleaſure he had in being able to aſſure me, that my ſuit had been ſucceſsful, and that I might appear again with great ſafety.

'Accordingly, I returned to town in his coach and ſix, which he had ſent for my convenience, and the ſame evening went with him to the maſquerade, where we paſſed the night very agreeably, his ſpirits, as well as mine, being elevated to a joyous pitch by the happy event of my proceſs. This gentleman was a perſon of great honour, worth, and good-nature; he loved me extremely, but did not care that I ſhould know the extent of his paſſion: on the contrary, he endeavoured to perſuade me he had laid it down as a maxim, that no woman ſhould ever have power enough over his heart, to give him the leaſt pain or diſquiet. In ſhort, he had made a progreſs in my affection, and to his generoſity was I indebted for my ſubſiſtence two whole years; during which he was continually profeſſing this philoſophick indifference, while, at the ſame time, he was giving me daily aſſurances of his friendſhip and eſteem, and treating me with inceſſant marks of the moſt paſſionate love: ſo that I concluded his intention was cold, though his temper was warm. Conſidering myſelf as an incumbrance upon his fortune, I redoubled my endeavours to obtain a ſeparate maintenance from my lord, and removed from St. James's Square to lodgings at Kenſington, where I had not long enjoyed myſelf

ſelf in tranquillity, before it was interrupted by a very unexpected viſit.

'While I was buſy one day dreſſing in my dining-room, I found his lordſhip at my elbow, before I was aware of his approach, although his coach was at the door, and the houſe already in the poſſeſſion of his ſervants. He accoſted me in the uſual ſtyle, as if we had parted the night before; and I anſwered him with an appearance of the ſame careleſs familiarity, deſiring him to ſit down, while I retreated to my chamber, locked the door, and fairly went to bed; being, perhaps, the firſt woman who went thither for protection from the inſults of a man. Here, then, I immured myſelf with my faithful Abigail. My lord finding me ſecured, knocked at the door, and through the key-hole begged to be admitted; aſſuring me, that all he wanted was a conference. I deſired to be excuſed, though I believed his aſſurance; but I had no inclination to converſe with him, becauſe I knew from experience the nature of his converſation, which was ſo diſagreeable and tormenting, that I would have exchanged it at any time for a good beating, and thought myſelf a gainer by the bargain. However, he perſiſted in his importunities to ſuch a degree, that I aſſented to his propoſal, on condition that the Duke of L—— ſhould be preſent at the interview; and he immediately ſent a meſſage to his grace, while I in peace ate my breakfaſt, conveyed in a baſket, which was hoiſted up to the window of my bed-chamber.

'The duke was ſo kind as to come at my lord's requeſt, and before I would open the door, gave me his word, that I ſhould be protected from all violence and compulſion. Thus aſſured, they were permitted to enter. My little gentleman ſitting down by my bed-ſide, began to repeat the old hackneyed arguments he had formerly uſed, with the view of inducing me to live with him; and I, on my ſide, repeated my former objections, or pretended to liſten to his repreſentations, while my imagination was employed in contriving the

means of effecting an escape, as the duke easily perceived by my countenance.

'Finding all his remonstrances ineffectual, he quitted the chamber, and left his cause to the eloquence of his grace, who sat with me a whole half hour, without exerting himself much in behalf of his client, because he knew I was altogether obstinate, and determined on that score; but joked on the behaviour of his lordship, who, though jealous of most people, had left him alone with me in my bed-chamber, observing, that he must either have great confidence in his virtue, or a very bad opinion of him otherwise. In short, I found means to defer the categorical answer till next day, and invited the duke and his lordship to dine with me to-morrow. My wise yoke-fellow seemed to doubt the sincerity of this invitation, and was very much disposed to keep possession of my house: but, by the persuasions of his grace, and the advice of H——n, who was his chief counsellor and back, he was prevailed upon to take my word, and for the present left me.

'They were no sooner retired, than I arose with great expedition, packed up my cloaths, and took shelter in Essex, for the first time. Next day, my lord and his noble friend came to dinner, according to appointment; and being informed of my escape by my woman, whom I had left in the house, his lordship discovered some signs of discontent, and insisted upon seeing my papers; upon which my maid produced a parcel of bills which I owed to different people. Notwithstanding this disappointment, he sat down to what was provided for dinner, and with great deliberation eat up a leg of lamb, the best part of a fowl, and something else, which I do not now remember; and then very peaceably went away, giving my maid an opportunity of following me to the place of my retreat.

'My intention was to have sought refuge, as formerly, in another country; but I was prevented from putting my design in execution by a fit of illness, during which I was visited by my physician and some of my

own

own relations, particularly a diſtant couſin of mine, whom my lord had engaged in his intereſts, by promiſing to recompenſe her amply, if ſhe could perſuade me to comply with his deſire. In this office ſhe was aſſiſted by the doctor, who was my friend, and a man of ſenſe, for whom I have the moſt perfect eſteem, though he and I have often differed in point of opinion. In a word, I was expoſed to the inceſſant importunities of all my acquaintance, which added to the deſperate circumſtances of my fortune, compelled me to embrace the terms that were offered, and I again returned to the domeſtick duties of a wife.

'I was conducted to my lord's houſe by an old friend of mine, a gentleman turned of fifty, of admirable parts and underſtanding; he was a pleaſing companion, chearful and humane, and had acquired a great ſhare of my eſteem and reſpect. In a word, his advice had great weight in my deliberations, becauſe it ſeemed to be the reſult of experience and diſintereſted friendſhip. Without all doubt, he had an unfeigned concern for my welfare; but being an admirable politician, his ſcheme was to make my intereſt coincide with his own inclinations; for I had unwittingly made an innovation upon his heart; and as he thought I ſhould hardly favour his paſſion while I was at liberty to converſe with the reſt of my admirers, he counſelled me to ſurrender that freedom, well knowing that my lord would be eaſily perſuaded to baniſh all his rivals from the houſe; in which caſe he did not doubt of his being able to inſinuate himſelf into my affections; becauſe he laid it down as an eternal truth, that if any two perſons of different ſexes were obliged to live together in a deſart, where they would be excluded from all other human intercourſe, they would naturally and inevitably contract an inclination for each other.

'How juſt this hypotheſis may be, I leave to the determination of the curious; though, if I may be allowed to judge, from my own diſpoſition, a couple ſo ſituated would be apt to imbibe mutual diſguſts, from the nature

ture and neceſſity of their union; unleſs their aſſociation was at firſt the effect of reciprocal affection and eſteem. Be this as it will, I honour the gentleman for his plan, which was ingeniouſly contrived, and artfully conducted; but I happened to have too much addreſs for him in the ſequel, cunning as he was, though at firſt I did not perceive his drift; and his lordſhip was much leſs likely to comprehend his meaning.

'Immediately after this new accommodation, I was carried to a country-houſe belonging to my lord, and was ſimple enough to venture myſelf (unattended by any ſervant on whoſe integrity I could depend) in the hands of his lordſhip and H——n, whoſe villainy I always dreaded; though at this time my apprehenſions were conſiderably increaſed, by recollecting, that it was not his intereſt to let me live in that houſe, leſt his conduct ſhould be enquired into; and by remembering, that the very houſe to which we were going, had been twice burned down in a very ſhort ſpace of time, not without ſuſpicion of his having been the incendiary, on account of ſome box of writings which was loſt in the conflagration. True it is, this imputation was never made good; and perhaps he was altogether innocent of the charge, which nevertheleſs affected my ſpirits in ſuch a manner, as rendered me the moſt miſerable of all mortals. In this terror did I remain, till my conſternation was weakened by the arrival of Mr. Bal——, a good-natured worthy man, whom my lord had invited to his houſe, and I thought would not ſee me ill uſed. In a few weeks we were joined by Dr. S—— and his lady, who viſited us according to their promiſe; and it was reſolved that we ſhould ſet out for Tunbridge on a party of pleaſure, and at our return examine H——n's accounts.

'This laſt part of our ſcheme was not at all reliſhed by our worthy ſteward, who therefore determined to overturn our whole plan, and ſucceeded accordingly. My lord all of a ſudden declared himſelf againſt the jaunt we had projected, and inſiſted upon my ſtaying at

 home,

home, without assigning any reason for this peremptory behaviour; his countenance being cloudy, and for the space of three days he did not open his mouth.

'At last, he one night entered my bed-chamber, to which he now had free access, with his sword under his arm, and if I remember aright, it was ready drawn; I could not help taking notice of this alarming circumstance, which shocked me the more, as it happened immediately after a gloomy fit of discontent. However, I seemed to overlook the incident, and dismissing my maid, went to bed; because I was ashamed to acknowledge, even to my own heart, any dread of a person whom I despised so much. However, the strength of my constitution was not equal to the fortitude of my mind: I was taken ill, and the servants were obliged to be called up; while my lord himself, terrified at my situation, ran up stairs to Mrs. S——, who was in bed; told her, with evident perturbation of spirits, that I was very much indisposed, and said, he believed I was frighted by his entering my chamber with his sword in his hand.

'This lady was so startled at his information, that she ran into my apartment half naked, and as she went down stairs, asked what reason could induce him to have carried his sword with him. Upon which he gave her to understand, that his intention was to kill the bats. I believe and hope he had no other design than that of intimidating me, but when the affair happened I was of a different opinion. Mrs. S—— having put on her cloaths, sat up all night by my bed-side, and was so good as to assure me, that she would not leave me until I should be safely delivered from the apprehension that surrounded me in this house, to which she and the doctor had been the principal cause of my coming; for my lord had haunted and importuned them incessantly on this subject, protesting that he loved me with the most inviolable affection; and all he desired was, that I would sit at his table, manage his family, and share his fortune. By these professions, uttered

with an air of honesty and good-nature, he had imposed himself upon them for the best tempered creature upon earth; and then used all their influence with me to take him into favour. This hath been the case with a great many people, who had but a superficial knowledge of his disposition; but in the course of their acquaintance they have never failed to discern and acknowledge their mistake.

'The doctor on his return from Tunbridge, to which place he had made a trip by himself, found me ill a-bed, and the whole family in confusion: surprized and concerned at this disorder, he entered into expostulation with my lord, who owned, that the cause of his displeasure and disquiet was no other than jealousy: H—— had informed him, that I had been seen to walk out with Mr. Bal— in a morning; and that our correspondence had been observed, with many additional circumstances which were absolutely false and groundless. This imputation was no sooner understood, than it was resolved that the accuser should be examined in presence of us all. He accordingly appeared, exceedingly drunk, though it was morning, and repeated the articles of the charge as an information he had received from a man who came from town to hang the bells, and was long ago returned to London.

'This was an instance of his cunning and address, which did not forsake him even in his hours of intoxication. Had he fixed the calumny on any one of the servants, he would have been confronted and detected in his falshood. Nevertheless, though he could not be legally convicted, it plainly appeared that he was the author of this defamation, which incensed Mr. Bal— to such a degree, that he could scarce be witheld from punishing him on the spot by manual chastisement. However he was prevailed upon to abstain from such immediate vengeance, as a step unworthy of his character; and the affair was brought to this issue, that his lordship should either part with me or Mr. H——;

for I was fully determined against living under the same roof with such an incendiary.

'This alternative being proposed, my lord dismissed his steward, and we returned to town with the doctor and Mrs. S——; for I had imbibed such horror and aversion for this country-seat (though one of the pleasantest in England) that I could not bear to live in it. We therefore removed to a house in Bond Street, where, according to the advice of my friends, I exerted my whole power and complaisance, in endeavours to keep my husband in good-humour; but was so unsuccessful in my attempts, that if ever he was worse-tempered, more capricious, or intolerable, at one time than at another, this was the season in which his ill-humour predominated to the most rancorous degree. I was scarce ever permitted to stir abroad, saw nobody at home but my old male friend whom I have mentioned above, and the doctor with his lady, from whose conversation also I was at last excluded.

'Nevertheless, I contrived to steal a meeting now and then with my late benefactor, for whom I entertained a great share of affection, exclusive of that gratitude which was due to his generosity. It was not his fault that I compromised matters with my lord; for he was as free of his purse as I was unwilling to use it. It would, therefore, have been unfriendly, unkind, and ungrateful in me, (now that I was in affluence) to avoid all intercourse with a man who had supported me in adversity. I think people cannot be too shy and scrupulous in receiving favours; but when once they are conferred, they ought never to forget the obligation: and I was never more concerned at any incident of my life, than at hearing that this gentleman did not receive a letter, in which I acknowledged the last proof of his friendship and liberality which I had occasion to use, because I have since learned that he suspected me of neglect.

'But to return to my situation in Bond Street. I bore it as well as I could for the space of three months, during

during which I lived in the midſt of ſpies, who were employed to watch my conduct, and underwent every mortification that malice, power, and folly, could inflict. Nay, ſo ridiculous, ſo unreaſonable was my tyrant in his ſpleen, that he declared he would even be jealous of Heydigger, if there was no other man to incur his ſuſpicion. He expected that I would ſpend my whole time with him, *tête-à-tête*: when I ſacrificed my enjoyment to theſe comfortable parties, he never failed to lay hold on ſome innocent expreſſion of mine, which he made the foundation of a quarrel; and when I ſtrove to avoid theſe diſagreeable miſinterpretations, by reading or writing, he inceſſantly teazed and tormented me with the imputation of being peeviſh, ſullen, and reſerved.

'Harraſſed by this inſufferable behaviour, I communicated my caſe to Dr. S—— and his lady, intimating that I neither could nor would expoſe myſelf any longer to ſuch uſage. The doctor exhorted me to bear my fate with patience, and Mrs. S—— was ſilent on the ſubject; ſo that I ſtill heſitated between ſtaying and going; when the doctor, being one night at ſupper, happened to have ſome words with my lord, who was ſo violently tranſported with paſſion, that I was actually afraid of going to bed with him; and next morning when he awaked, there was ſuch an expreſſion of frantick wildneſs in his countenance, that I imagined he was actually diſtracted.

'This alarming circumſtance confirmed me in my reſolution of decamping; and I accordingly moved my quarters to a houſe in Sackville Street, where I had lodged when I was a widow. From thence I ſent a meſſage to the Duke of L——, deſiring he would make my lord acquainted with the place of my abode, my reaſons for removing, and my intention to defend myſelf againſt all his attempts. The firſt night of this ſeparation I went to bed by myſelf, with as much pleaſure as a man would feel in going to bed to his miſtreſs,

whom he had long solicited in vain; so rejoiced was I to be delivered from my obnoxious bedfellow!

'From these lodgings I soon moved to Brook Street, where I had not long enjoyed the sweets of my escape, when I was importuned to return, by a new steward whom my lord had engaged in the room of H——n. This gentleman, who bore a very fair character, made such judicious representations, and behaved so candidly in the discharge of his function, that I agreed he should act as umpire in the difference betwixt us; and once more a reconciliation was effected, though his lordship began to be dissatisfied even before the execution of our agreement; in consequence of which he attended me to Bath, whither I went for the benefit of my health, which was not a little impaired.

'This accommodation had a surprizing effect upon my lover; who, notwithstanding his repeated declarations, that no woman should ever gain such an ascendancy over his heart as to be able to give him pain, suffered all the agonies of disappointed love, when he now found himself deprived of the opportunities of seeing me, and behaved very differently from what he had imagined he should: his words and actions were desperate; one of his expressions to me was, "It is like twisting my heart-strings, and tearing it out of my body." Indeed I should never have acted this part, had I foreseen what he would have suffered; but I protest I believed him when he said otherwise, so much, that his declaration on that subject was the occasion of my giving him up; and it was now too late to retract.

'In our expedition to the Bath, I was accompanied by a very agreeable young lady, with whom I passed my time very happily, amid the diversions of the place, which screened me, in a good measure, from the vexatious society of my hopeful partner. From this place we repaired to his seat in the country, where we spent a few months, and thence returned again to our house in Bond Street. Here, while I was confined to my bed by illness, it was supposed my indisposition was no

other than a private lying-in, though I was under the roof with my lord, and attended by his servants.

'While the distemper continued, my lord (to do him justice) behaved with all imaginable tenderness and care; and his concern on these occasions I have already mentioned, as a strange inconsistency in his disposition. If his actions were at all accountable, I should think he took pains to fret me into a fever first, in order to manifest his love and humanity afterwards. When I recovered my strength and spirits, I went abroad, saw company, and should have been easy, had he been contented; but as my satisfaction increased, his good-humour decayed, and he banished from his house, one by one, all the people whose conversation could have made my life agreeable.

'I often expostulated with him upon his malignant behaviour, protesting my desire of living peaceably with him, and begging he would not lay me under the necessity of changing my measures. He was deaf to all my remonstrances, (though I warned him more than once of the event;) persisted in his maxims of persecution; and after repeated quarrels, I again left his house, fully determined to suffer all sorts of extremity, rather than subject myself to the tyranny of his disposition.

'This year was productive of one fatal event, which I felt with the utmost sensibility of sorrow, and I shall always remember with regret: I mean the death of Mr. B——, with whom I had constantly maintained an intimate correspondence since the first commencement of our acquaintance. He was one of the most valuable men, and promised to be one of the brightest ornaments that this or any other age had produced. I enjoyed his friendship without reserve; and such was the confidence he reposed in my integrity, from long experience of my truth, that he often said he would believe my bare assertion, even though it should contradict the evidence of his own senses. These being the terms upon which we lived, it is not to be supposed

that I bore the loſs of him without repining: indeed my grief was unſpeakable; and though the edge of it be now ſmoothed by the lenient hand of Time, I ſhall never ceaſe to cheriſh his memory with the moſt tender remembrance.

'During the laſt period of my living with my lord, I had agreed to the expediency of obtaining an act of parliament, which would enable him to pay his debts; on which occaſion there was a neceſſity for cancelling a deed that ſubſiſted between us, relating to a ſeparate maintenance; to which, on certain proviſions I was intitled: and this was to be ſet aſide, ſo far as it interfered with the abovementioned ſcheme, while the reſt of it ſhould remain in force. While this affair was about to be tranſacted, my lord very generouſly inſiſted upon my concurrence, in annulling the whole ſettlement; and when I refuſed to comply with this demand, becauſe this was the ſole reſource I had againſt his illuſage, he would not proceed in the execution of his plan, though by dropping it he hurt nobody but himſelf; and he accuſed me of having receded from my word, after I had drawn him into a conſiderable expence.

'This imputation of breaking my word, which I defy the whole world to prove I ever did, incenſed me the more, as I myſelf had propoſed the ſcheme for his ſervice, although I knew the accompliſhment of it would endanger the validity of my own ſettlement; and my indignation was ſtill more augmented by the behaviour of Mr. G——n, who had always profeſſed a regard for my intereſt, and upon my laſt accommodation with my lord, undertaken to effect a reconciliation between my father and me: but when he was queſtioned about the particulars of this difference, and deſired to declare whether his lordſhip or I was to blame, he declined the office of arbitrator, refuſed to be explicit upon the ſubject, and by certain ſhrewd hum's and ha's, ſignified his diſapprobation of my conduct. Yet this very man, when I imparted to him, in confidence,

my

my intention of making another retreat, and frankly asked his opinion of my design, seemed to acquiesce in the justice of it in these remarkable words. "Madam, if I thought, or had hopes of my lord's growing better, I would down on my knees to desire you to stay; but as I have not, I say nothing."

'If he connived at my conduct in this particular, why should he disapprove of it, when all I asked was but common justice? But he was a dependant; and therefore I excuse his phlegmatick (not to call it unfriendly) behaviour. Indeed he could not be too cautious of giving offence to his lordship, who sometimes made him feel the effects of that wrath which other people had kindled; particularly, in consequence of a small adventure which happened about this very period of time.

'A very agreeable, sprightly, good-natured young man, a near relation of my lord, happened to be at our house one evening, when there was a fire in the neighbourhood; we agreed to go and sup at a tavern, *en famille*; and having spent the evening with great mirth and good-humour, this young gentleman, who was naturally facetious, in taking his leave, saluted us all round. My lord, who had before entertained some jealousy of his kinsman, was very much provoked by this trifling incident, but very prudently suppressed his displeasure till he returned to his own house, where his rage co-operating with the Champagne he had drank, inflamed him to such a degree of resolution, that he sprung upon the innocent G——n, and collared him with great fury, though he was altogether unconcerned in the cause of his indignation.

'This extravagant and frantick behaviour, added to the other grievances under which I laboured, hastened my resolution of leaving him; and he to this day blames his relation, as the immediate cause of my escape, whereas he ought to place it to the account of his own madness and indiscretion. When I retired to Park Street, he cautioned all my tradesmen (not even

excepting my baker) againſt giving me credit, aſſuring them that he would not pay any debts I ſhould contract; and the difficulties to which I was reduced, in conſequence of this charitable declaration, together with the reflection of what I had ſuffered, and might undergo, from the caprice and barbarity of his diſpoſition, affected my health ſo much, that I was taken again ill, and my life thought in danger.

'My conſtitution, however, got the better of my diſtemper, and I was ordered into the country by my phyſicians, for the benefit of the air; ſo that I found myſelf under the neceſſity of keeping two houſes, when I was little able to ſupport one, and ſet up my chariot, becauſe I could not defray the expence of a hackney-coach; for I had as much credit given me as I aſked for, notwithſtanding my lord's orders to the contrary.

'Having recruited my ſpirits in the country, I returned to town, and was viſited by my friends, who never forſook me in adverſity; and in the ſummer removed to a houſe in Eſſex, where I lived a few months in great tranquillity, unmoleſted by my tyrant, who ſometimes gave me a whole year's reſpite. Here I uſed to ride and drive by turns (as my humour dictated) with horſes which were lent me; and I had the company of my lover, and another gentleman, who was a very agreeable companion, and of ſingular ſervice to me in the ſequel.

'At laſt, my lord having received intelligence of the place of my abode, and his tormenting humour recurring, he ſet out for my habitation, and in the morning appeared in his coach and ſix, attended by Mr. G——n, and another perſon, whom he had engaged for the purpoſe, with ſeveral domeſticks armed. I immediately ſhut up my doors at his approach, and refuſed him admittance, which he endeavoured to obtain by a ſucceſſion of prayers and threats; but I was deaf to both, and reſolved to hold out to the laſt. Seeing me determined, he began his attack, and his ſervants actually forced their way into the houſe; upon which I retreat-

ed

ed up ſtairs, and fortified myſelf in my apartment, which the aſſailants ſtormed with ſuch fury, that the door began to give way, and I retired into another room.

'Whilſt I remained in this poſt, Mr. G——n demanded a parley, in which he begged I would favour my lord with an interview, otherwiſe he knew not what might be the conſequence. To this remonſtrance I replied, that I was not diſpoſed to comply with his requeſt; and that though their deſign ſhould be murder, I was not at all afraid of death. Upon this declaration they renewed their attacks, which they carried on with indifferent ſucceſs till the afternoon, when my lord, (as if he had been at play) ſent a formal meſſage to me, deſiring that all hoſtilities ſhould ceaſe, till after both parties ſhould have dined. At the ſame time, my own ſervants came for inſtructions; and I ordered them to let him have every thing which he ſhould call for, as far as the houſe could afford.

'He did not fail to make uſe of this permiſſion; but, ſitting down with his companions, eat up my dinner without heſitation, after he had paid me the compliment of deſiring to know what he ſhould ſend up to my apartment. Far from having any ſtomach to partake of his meal, I ſat ſolitary upon my bed, in a ſtate of melancholy expectation, having faſtened the door of the outward room for my ſecurity, while I kept my chamber open for the convenience of air, the weather being exceſſively hot.

'His lordſhip having indulged his appetite, reſumed his attempt, and all of a ſudden I heard a noiſe in the next room; upon which I ſtarted up, and perceiving that he had got into my anti-chamber, by the help of a bench that ſtood under the window, I flung-to the door of my room, which I locked with great expedition, and opened another that communicated with the ſtaircaſe, ran out of the houſe, through a crowd of more than a hundred people, whom this fray had gathered together.

'Being

'Being univerſally beloved in the neighbourhood, and reſpected by my lord's ſervants, I paſſed among them untouched, and took refuge in a neighbouring cottage; while his lordſhip bawled and roared for aſſiſtance, being afraid to come out as he had gone in. Without waiting for his deliberations, I changed cloaths with the poor woman who had given me ſhelter, and in her blue apron and ſtraw-hat, ſallied out into the fields, intending to ſeek protection at the houſe of a gentleman not far off, though I was utterly ignorant of the road that led to it. However, it was my good fortune to meet with a farmer, who undertook to conduct me to the place; otherwiſe I ſhould have miſſed my way, and in all probability lain in the fields; for, by this time, it was eight o'clock at night.

'Under the direction of this guide, I traverſed hedges and ditches, (for I would not venture to travel in the highway, leſt I ſhould fall into the hands of my purſuer) and after I had actually tumbled in the mire, and walked ſix or ſeven long miles by the help of a good ſpirit, which never failed me on ſuch occaſions, I arrived at the place, and rung the bell at the garden-gate for admittance. Seeing my figure, which was very uncouth, together with my draggled condition, they denied me entrance; but when they underſtood who I was, immediately opened the door, and I was hoſpitably entertained, after having been the ſubject of mirth, on account of my dreſs and adventure.

'Next day I returned and took poſſeſſion of my houſe again, where I reſumed my former amuſements, which I enjoyed in quiet for the ſpace of a whole month, waiting with reſignation for the iſſue of my law-ſuit; when one afternoon I was apprized of his lordſhip's approach by one of my ſpies, whom I always employed to reconnoitre the road; and ſo fortunate was I in the choice of theſe ſcouts, that I never was betrayed by one of them, though they were often bribed for that purpoſe.

'I no ſooner received this intelligence, than I ordered

my horſe to be ſaddled, and mounting, rode out of ſight immediately, directing my courſe a different way from the London road. I had not long proceeded in this track, when my career was all of a ſudden ſtopped by a five-bar gate, which, after ſome heſitation, I reſolved to leap, (my horſe being an old hunter) if I ſhould find myſelf purſued. However, with much difficulty I made a ſhift to open it, and arrived in ſafety at the houſe of my very good friend Mr. G——, who being a juſtice of rhe peace, had promiſed me his protection, if it ſhould be wanted.

'Thus ſecured for the preſent, I ſent out ſpies to bring information of his lordſhip's proceedings, and underſtood that he had taken poſſeſſion of my houſe, turned my ſervants adrift, and made himſelf maſter of all my moveables, cloaths, and papers. As for the papers, they were of no conſequence, but of cloaths I had a good ſtock: and when I had reaſon to believe that he did not intend to relinquiſh his conqueſt, I thought it was high time for me to remove to a greater diſtance from his quarters. Accordingly, two days after my eſcape, I ſet out at eleven o'clock at night, in a chariot and four, which I borrowed of my friend, attended by a footman, who was a ſtout fellow and well armed, I myſelf being provided with a brace of good piſtols, which I was fully determined to uſe againſt any perſon who ſhould preſume to lay violent hands upon me, except my lord, for whom a leſs mortal weapon would have ſufficed, ſuch as a bodkin or a tinder-box. Nothing could be farther from my intention, than the deſire of hurting any living creature, much leſs my huſband; my deſign was only to defend myſelf from cruelty and oppreſſion, which I knew, by fatal experience, would infallibly be my lot, ſhould he get me into his power; and I thought I had as good a right to preſerve my happineſs as that which every individual has to preſerve his life, eſpecially againſt a ſet of ruffians, who were engaged to rob me of it for a little dirty lucre.

'In

'In the midſt of our journey, the footman came up, and told me I was dogged; upon which I looked out, and ſeeing a man riding by the chariot-ſide, preſented one of my piſtols out of the chariot window, and preſerved that poſture of defence until he thought proper to retreat, and rid me of the fears that attended his company. I arrived in town, and changing my equipage, hired an open chaiſe, in which (though I was almoſt ſtarved with cold) I travelled to Reading, which I reached by ten next morning; and from thence proceeded farther in the country, with a view of taking refuge with Mrs. C——, who was my particular friend. Here I ſhould have found ſhelter, though my lord had been before-hand with me, and endeavoured to prepoſſeſs her againſt my conduct, had not the houſe been crouded with company, among whom I could not poſſibly have been concealed, eſpecially from her brother, who was an intimate friend of my perſecutor.

'Things being thus ſituated, I enjoyed but a very ſhort interview with her, in which her ſorrow and perplexity on my account appeared with great expreſſion in her countenance; and though it was not in her power to afford me the relief I expected, ſhe in the moſt genteel manner ſent after me a ſmall ſum of money, thinking that, conſidering the hurry in which I left my houſe, I might have occaſion for it on the road. I was by this time benumbed with cold, fatigued with travelling, and almoſt fretted to death by my diſappointment. However, this was no time to indulge deſpondence; ſince nobody could or would aſſiſt me, I ſtood the more in need of my own reſolution and preſence of mind. After ſome deliberation, I ſteered my courſe back to London; and being unwilling to return by the ſame road in which I came, as well as impatient to be at the end of my journey, I choſe the Bagſhot way, and ventured to croſs the heath by moon-light.

'Here I was attacked by a footpad armed with a broad ſword, who came up and demanded my money. My ſtock amounted to twelve guineas; and I foreſaw,

that should I be stripped of the whole sum, I could not travel without discovering who I was, and consequently running the risk of being detected by my pursuer. On these considerations I gave the fellow three guineas and some silver; with which he was so far from being satisfied, that he threatened to search me for more: but I ordered the coachman to proceed, and by good fortune escaped that ceremony; though I was under some apprehension of being overtaken with a pistol-bullet in my flight, and therefore held down my head in the chaise, in imitation of some great men, who are said to have ducked in the same manner in the day of battle.

'My fears happened to be disappointed. I lay at an inn upon the road, and next day arrived in town, in the utmost difficulty and distress; for I knew not where to fix my habitation, and was destitute of all means of support. In this dilemma, I applied to my lawyer, who recommended me to the house of a tradesman in Westminster, where I lodged and boarded upon my faithful Abigail, (whom I shall distinguish by the name of Mrs. S——r) for the space of ten weeks, during which I saw nobody, and never once stirred abroad.

'While I was thus harrassed out of all enjoyment of life, and reduced to the utmost indigence, by the cruelty of my persecutor, who had even stripped me of my wearing apparel, I made a conquest of Lord D——, a nobleman who is now dead, and therefore I shall say little of his character, which is perfectly well known: this only will I observe, that next to my own tyrant, he was the person of whom I had the greatest abhorrence. Nevertheless, when these two came in competition, I preferred the offers of this new lover, which were very considerable; and as an asylum was the chief thing I wanted, agreed to follow him to his country seat, whither I actually sent my cloaths, which I had purchased upon credit.

'However, upon mature deliberation, I changed my mind, and signified my resolution in a letter, desiring

at the same time, that my baggage might be sent back. In consequence of this message, I expected a visit from him, in all the rage of indignation and disappointment, and gave orders that he should not be admitted into my house: yet, notwithstanding this precaution, he found means to procure entrance; and one of the first objects that I saw next morning in my bed-chamber, was my lover, armed with his horsewhip, against which (from the knowlege of the man) I did not think myself altogether secure; though I was not much alarmed, because I believed myself superior to him in point of bravery, should the worst come to the worst; but, contrary to my expectation, and his usual behaviour to our sex, he accosted me very politely, and began to expostulate upon the contents of my letter. I freely told him, that I had rashly assented to his proposal, for my own convenience only; that when I reflected on what I had done, I thought it ungenerous in me to live with him upon these terms; and that, as I did not like him, and could not dissemble, such a correspondence could never tend to the satisfaction of either. He allowed the inference was just, though he was very much chagrined at my previous proceeding: he relinquished his claim, restored my cloaths, and never afterwards upbraided me with my conduct in this affair; though he at one time owned, that he still loved me, and ever should, because I had used him ill: a declaration that strongly marks the peculiarity of his character. As for my own part, I own that my behaviour on this occasion is no other way excusable, than on account of the miserable perplexity of my circumstances, which were often so calamitous, that I wonder I have not been compelled to take such steps as would have rendered my conduct much more exceptionable than it really is.

'At last all my hopes were blasted by the issue of my suit, which was determined in favour of my lord. Even then I refused to yield; on the contrary, coming out of retirement, I took lodgings in Suffolk Street,

and

and ſet my tyrant at defiance. But, being unwilling to truſt my doors to the care of other people, I hired an houſe in Conduit Street; and no ſooner appeared in the world again, than I was ſurrounded by divers and ſundry ſorts of admirers. I believe I received the incenſe and addreſſes of all kinds under the ſun, except that ſort which was moſt to my liking, a man capable of contracting and inſpiring a mutual attachment; but ſuch a one is equally rare and ineſtimable: not but that I own myſelf greatly obliged to all thoſe who cultivated my good graces, though they were very little beholden to me; for where I did not really love, I could never profeſs that paſſion; that ſort of diſſimulation is a ſlavery that no honeſt nature will undergo. Except one worthy young man whom I ſometimes ſaw, they were a ſtrange medley of inſignificant beings; one was inſipid, another ridiculouſly affected; a third void of all education; a fourth altogether inconſiſtent; and, in ſhort, I found as many trifling characters among the men, as ever I obſerved in my own ſex. Some of them I endeavoured to bring over to my maxims, while they attempted to make a proſelyte of me; but finding the taſk impractical on both ſides, we wiſely dropped each other.

'At length, however, I was bleſſed with the acquaintance of one nobleman, who is, perhaps, the firſt character in England, in point of honour, integrity, wit, ſenſe, and benevolence: when I have thus diſtinguiſhed him, I need ſcarce mention Lord ——. This great, this good man, poſſeſſes every accompliſhment requiſite to inſpire admiration, love, and eſteem. With infinitely more merit than almoſt ever fell to one man's ſhare, he manifeſts ſuch diffidence of his own qualifications, as cannot fail to prepoſſeſs every company in his favour. He ſeems to obſerve nothing, yet ſees every thing; his manner of telling a ſtory, and making trifles elegant, is peculiar to himſelf; and though he has a thouſand oddities, they ſerve only to make him more agreeable. After what I have ſaid, it may be ſuppoſed

that I was enamoured of his perſon: but this was not the caſe; love is altogether capricious and fanciful; yet I admire, honour, and eſteem him to the higheſt degree; and when I obſerve that his character reſembled that of my dear departed friend Mr. B——, or rather, that Mr. B——, had he lived, would have reſembled Lord ——, I pay the higheſt compliment I can conceive both to the living and the dead.

'In this nobleman's friendſhip and converſation I thought myſelf happy; though I was, as uſual, expoſed to the indefatigable efforts of my lord, who, one day, while I was favoured with the company of this generous friend; appeared at my door in his coach, attended by another gentleman, who demanded entrance with an air of authority. A very honeſt footman, who had been long in my ſervice, ran up ſtairs in the utmoſt conſternation, and gave me an account of what had happened below. Upon which, I told him he had nothing to anſwer for, and ordered him to keep the door faſt ſhut againſt all oppoſition: though I was ſo much affected with this unexpected aſſault, that Lord —— ſaid, he was never more ſurprized and ſhocked in his life, than at the horror which appeared in my countenance, when I ſaw the coach ſtop at the door.

'My little hero being refuſed admittance, went away, threatening to return ſpeedily with a reinforcement; and during this interval, I provided myſelf with a ſoldier, whom I placed centinel at the door, within ſide, to guard me from the danger of ſuch aſſaults for the future. My lord, true to his promiſe, marched back with his auxiliaries, reinforced with a conſtable, and repeated his demand of being admitted; and my ſoldier opening the ſaſh, in order to anſwer him, according to my direction, he no ſooner perceived the red coat, than he was ſeized with ſuch a panick, that he inſtantly fled with great precipitation; and when he recounted the adventure, like Falſtaff in the play, multiplied my guard into a whole file of muſqueteers. He alſo made a ſhift to diſcover the gentleman, who had

been

been ſo kind as to lend me one of his company, and complained of him to the Duke of N——, in hopes of ſeeing him broke for his miſdemeanor; but in that expectation he was luckily diſappointed.

'Perceiving that in England I ſhould never enjoy peace, but be continually ſubject to thoſe alarms and diſquiets which had already impaired my health and ſpirits, I reſolved to repair again to France, my beſt refuge and ſure retreat from the perſecution of my tyrant. Yet, before I took this ſtep, I endeavoured, by the advice of my friends, to conceal myſelf near Windſor; but was in a little time diſcovered by my lord, and hunted out of my lurking-place accordingly. I then removed to Chelſea, where I ſuffered inconceiveable uneaſineſs and agitation of mind, from the nature of my ſituation. My tranquillity being thus inceſſantly invaded by a man who could not be ſatisfied with me, and yet could not live without me: ſo that, though I was very much indiſpoſed, I ſet out for France, by the way of the Hague, as the war had ſhut up all other communication, having no other attendant but my woman S——r; who, though ſhe dreaded the ſea, and was upon the brink of matrimony, would not quit me in ſuch a calamitous condition, until I was joined by my footman and other maid, whom I ordered to follow me with the baggage. But, before my departure, I ſent a meſſage to Lord ——, demanding my cloaths, which he had ſeized in Eſſex; and he refuſing to deliver them, I was obliged to equip myſelf anew upon credit.

'I was ſupplied with money for my journey by my good friend L——; and after a ſhort and pleaſant paſſage, arrived at the Hague, where I ſtaid two months, and parted with S——r, on whom I ſettled an annuity of five and twenty pounds, payable out of the proviſion which I had or might obtain from my huſband. The ſame allowance had I prevailed upon Lord B—— to grant to another maid, who attended me while I lived in his houſe.

'I did not much reliſh the people in Holland, be-

cauſe they ſeemed entirely devoted to ſelf-intereſt, without any taſte for pleaſure or politeneſs; a ſpecies of diſpoſition that could not be very agreeable to me, who always deſpiſed money, had an unbounded benevolence of heart, and loved pleaſure beyond every other conſideration.—When I ſay pleaſure, I would not be underſtood to mean ſenſuality, which conſtitutes the ſupreme happineſs of thoſe only who are void of ſentiment and imagination. Nevertheleſs, I received ſome civilities in this place; and among the reſt, the reputation of having for my lover the King of P——'s miniſter, who was young and airy, and viſited me often; circumſtances that were ſufficient to lay me under the imputation of an amour, which I frequently incurred without having given the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion.

'Having taken leave of my Dutch friends, I departed from the Hague, in company with an Engliſh woman, whom I had choſen for that purpoſe, and arrived at Antwerp, with much difficulty and danger, the highway being infeſted with robbers. After having repoſed myſelf a few days in this city, I hired a coach for myſelf, and ſet out with my companion for Bruſſels; but before we reached Mechlin, our vehicle was attacked by two huſſars, who, with their ſabres drawn, obliged the coachman to drive into a wood near the road. I at firſt imagined they wanted to examine our paſſports, but was ſoon too well convinced of their deſign; and though very much ſhocked at the diſcovery, found reſolution enough to ſuppreſs my concern, ſo that it ſhould not aggravate the terrors of the young woman, who had almoſt died with apprehenſion. I even encouraged her to hope for the beſt; and addreſſing myſelf to the robbers in French, begged in the moſt ſuppliant manner that they would ſpare our lives; upon which one of them, who was a little fellow, aſſured me in the ſame language, that we had nothing to fear for our perſons.

'When we were conveyed in a ſtate of dreadful ſuſpenſe above three quarters of a mile into the wood,

the

the ruffians came into the coach, and taking my keys, which I kept ready in my hand for them, opened three large trunks that contained my baggage, and emptying them of every thing but my hoops and a few books, packed up their booty in a cloth; then robbed me of my money and jewels, even to my ſhoe-buckles, and ſleeve-buttons, took my footman's laced hat, and gave it by way of gratification, to a peaſant, who came from behind the buſhes, and aſſiſted them in packing.

'This affair being diſpatched, they ordered us to return to the road by a different way from that in which we were carried into the wood; and mounting their horſes, rode off with the plunder, though not before the little fellow, who was the leaſt ferocious of the two, had come and ſhaken me by the hand, wiſhing us a good journey; a compliment which I heartily returned, being extremely well pleaſed with the retreat of two ſuch companions, who had detained us a whole half hour; during which, notwithſtanding the aſſurance I had received, I was in continual apprehenſion of ſeeing their operation concluded with the murder of us all; for I ſuppoſe they were of that gang, who had ſome time before murdered a French officer, and uſed a lady extremely ill, after having rifled her of all ſhe had.

'Having thus undergone pillage, and being reduced to the extremity of indigence in a foreign land, it is not to be ſuppoſed that my reflections were very comfortable; and yet, though I ſuſtained the whole damage, I was the only perſon in the company who bore the accident with any reſolution and preſence of mind. My coachman and valet ſeemed quite terrified with fear; and it was not till I had repeated my directions, that the former drove farther into the wood, and took the firſt turning to the right, in order to regain the road, according to the command of the robbers, which I did not chuſe to diſobey.

'This misfortune I ſuffered by the miſinformation I received at Antwerp, where I would have provided

myſelf

myself with an escort, had not I been assured that there was not the least occasion to put myself to such extraordinary expence: and indeed the robbers took the only half hour in which they could have had an opportunity of plundering us; for we no sooner returned into the highway, than we met with the French artillery coming from Brussels, which was a security to us during the rest of our journey. We were afterwards informed, at a small village, that there was actually a large gang of deserters, who harboured in that wood, from which they made excursions in the neighbourhood, and kept the peasants in continual alarms.

'Having proceeded a little way, we were stopped by the artillery crossing a bridge; and as the train was very long, must have been detained till night, had not a soldier informed me, that if I would take the trouble to come out of my coach, and apply to the commandant, he would order them to halt, and allow me to pass. I took the man's advice, and was by him conducted, with much difficulty, through the crowd to some officers, who seemed scarce to deserve the name; for when I signified my request, they neither rose up, nor desired me to sit down; but lolling in their chairs, with one leg stretched out, asked, with an air of disrespectful raillery, where I was going? and when I answered, "To Paris;" desired to know what I would do there.

'I who am naturally civil, where I am civilly used, and saucy enough where I am treated with disregard, was very much piqued at their insolent and unmannerly behaviour, and began to reply to their impertinent questions very abruptly; so that a very tart dialogue would have ensued, had not the conversation been interrupted by a tall, thin, genteel, young French nobleman, an officer in the army, who chancing to come in, asked with great politeness what I would please to have. I then repeated my desire, and produced my passports, by which he learned who I was. He immediately gave orders that my coach should pass; and afterwards visited me at Paris, having obtained my permission,

miſſion, and taken my addreſs at parting; while the others, underſtanding my name and quality, aſked pardon for their impolite carriage, which they told me was owing to the repreſentation of the ſoldier, who gave them to underſtand that I was a ſtrolling actreſs.

'I could not help laughing heartily at this miſtake, which might have proceeded from the circumſtances of my appearance, my footman having been obliged to change hats with the peaſant, and myſelf being without buckles in my ſhoes, and buttons in my riding ſhirt, while my countenance ſtill retained marks of the fear, and confuſion I had undergone. After all, perhaps the fellow was a droll, and wanted to entertain himſelf at my expence.

'The day was ſo far conſumed in theſe adventures, that I was obliged to take up my lodgings at Mechlin, where I addreſſed myſelf to the intendant, giving him an account of the diſaſter I had met with, and deſiring I might have credit at the inn, as our whole company could not raiſe the value of a ſix-pence. This gentleman, though a provincial, was polite in his way, and not only granted my requeſt, but invited me to lodge at his own houſe. I accordingly gave him my company at ſupper, but did not chuſe to ſleep in his quarters, becauſe he appeared to be what the French call *un vieux debauché*.

'Next day he ſent a trumpet to the general, with a detail of my misfortune, in hopes of retrieving what I had loſt; but, notwithſtanding all poſſible ſearch, I was fain to put up with my damage, which, in linen, laces, cloaths, and baubles, amounted to upwards of ſeven hundred pounds: a loſs which never deprived me of one moment's reſt; for though I lodged at a miſerable inn, and lay in a paltry bed, I ſlept as ſound as if nothing extraordinary had happened, after I had written to London and Paris, that the payment of my bills of credit might be ſtopped. Indeed, I know but of two misfortunes in life capable of depreſſing my ſpirits; namely, the loſs of health and friends; all others

may be prevented or endured. The articles of that calamity which I chiefly regretted, were a picture of Lord W——m, and some inimitable letters from Mr. B——.

'From Mechlin I proceeded to Bruſſels, where being known, I got credit for ſome neceſſaries, and borrowed twenty guineas to defray the expence of my journey to Paris. Having conſulted with my friends about the ſafeſt method of travelling through Flanders, I was perſuaded to take places in the public voiture; and accordingly departed, not without fear of finding one part of the country as much infeſted with robbers as another. Nor were theſe apprehenſions aſſuaged by the converſation of my fellow-travellers, who being of the lower ſort of people, that delight in exaggerating dangers, entertained me all the way with an account of all the robberies and murders which had been committed on that road, with many additional circumſtances of their own invention.

'After having been two days expoſed to this comfortable converſation, among very diſagreeable company, which is certainly one of the moſt diſagreeable ſituations of life, I arrived at Liſle; where, thinking the dangerous part of the journey was now paſſed, I hired a poſt-chaiſe, and in two days more reached Paris, without any further moleſtation.

'Upon my arrival in this capital, I was immediately viſited by my old acquaintances, who hearing my diſaſter, offered me their cloaths, and inſiſted upon my wearing them, until I could be otherwiſe provided. They likewiſe engaged me in parties, with a view of amuſing my imagination, that I might not grow melancholy in reflecting upon my loſs; and deſired me to repeat the particulars of my ſtory forty times over, expreſsing great ſurprize at our not being murdered, or raviſhed at leaſt. As for this laſt ſpecies of outrage, the fear of it never once entered my head, otherwiſe I ſhould have been more ſhocked and alarmed than I really was; but it ſeems this was the chief circum-

ſtance

ſtance of my companion's apprehenſion; and I cannot help obſerving, that an homely woman is always more apt to entertain thoſe fears, than one whoſe perſon exposes her to much more imminent danger. However, I now learned, that the riſk I run was much greater than I imagined it to be, thoſe ruffians being familiarized to rape as well as murder.

'Soon after my appearance in Paris, I was favoured with the addreſſes of ſeveral French lovers; but I never had any taſte for foreigners, or indeed for any amuſements of that kind, except ſuch as were likely to be laſting, and ſettled upon a more agreeable footing than that of common gallantry. When I deviated from this principle, my conduct was the effect of compulſion, and therefore I was never eaſy under it, having been reduced to the alternative of two evils, the leaſt of which I was obliged to chuſe, as a man leaps into the ſea, in order to eſcape from a ſhip that is on fire.

'Though I rejected their love, I did not refuſe their company and converſation; and though my health was conſiderably impaired by the ſhock I received in my laſt adventure, which was conſiderably greater than I at firſt imagined, and affected my companion ſo much, that ſhe did not recover her ſpirits till ſhe returned to England: I ſay, though I was for ſome time a valetudinarian, I enjoyed myſelf in great tranquillity for the ſpace of ten months, during which I was viſited by Engliſh, Scotch, and French, of all parties and perſuaſions; for pleaſure is of no faction, and that was the chief object of my purſuit; neither was I ſo ambitious of being a politician, as to employ my time and thoughts upon ſubjects which I did not underſtand. I had admirers of all ſides, and ſhould have ſpent my time very much to my liking, had not I felt my funds ſenſibly diminiſh, without any proſpect of their being repaired; for I had been obliged to lay our a great part of the ſum allotted for my ſubſiſtence, in ſupplying my companion, my ſervant, and myſelf, with neceſſaries, in lieu of thoſe which we had loſt.

'Having

'Having before my eyes the uncomfortable profpect of wanting money in a ftrange place, I found myfelf under the neceffity of returning to England, where I had more refources than I could poffibly have among foreigners; and with that view wrote to Lord ——'s agents, defiring that I might be enabled to difcharge my obligations at Paris, by the payment of my pin-money. Thus a negociation commenced, and his lordfhip promifed to remit money for the clearance of my Paris debts, which amounted to four hundred pounds: but he would not advance one farthing more, though I gave him to underftand, that while he protracted the agreement, I muft inevitably be adding to my incumbrance, and that I fhould be as effectually detained by a debt of twenty pounds as if I owed a thoufand. Notwithftanding all my reprefentations, he would not part with one fhilling over the neat fum which I had at firft ftipulated; fo that all my meafures were rendered abortive, and I found it altogether impracticable to execute thofe refolutions I had formed in his favour.

'Thus did he, for a mere trifle, embarrafs the woman for whom he profeffes the moft unlimited love, and whofe principles he pretends to hold in the utmoft veneration. Indeed, his confidence in my integrity is not without foundation; for many wives, with one half of my provocation, would have ruined him to all intents and purpofes; whereas, notwithftanding all the expences to which I have been expofed by his continual perfecution, he never paid a fhilling on my account, except one thoufand pounds, exclufive of the fmall allowance which was my due. In a word, fo much time elapfed before my lord could prevail upon himfelf to advance the bare four hundred, that I was involved in frefh difficulties, from which I found it impoffible to extricate myfelf: and though I had occafion to write a letter to my benefactor Lord ——, in which I expreffed my acknowledgment for paft favours, I could not venture to folicit more; even when I was encouraged by

a very

a very obliging anſwer, wherein he declared that the good qualities of my mind and heart would bind him to me in friendſhip for ever.

'While I ruminated on my uncomfortable ſituation, which would neither permit me to return to England, nor to ſtay much longer where I was, a young Engliſhman of immenſe fortune took Paris in his way from Italy, accompanied by a moſt agreeable Scotchman, of very good ſenſe and great vivacity. It was my good or ill fortune to become acquainted with theſe gentlemen, who having ſeen me at the opera, expreſſed a deſire of being known to me, and accordingly favoured me with a viſit one afternoon, when the briſk North Briton ingroſſed the whole converſation; while the other ſeemed fearful and diffident even to a degree of baſhfulneſs, through which, however, I could diſcern a delicate ſenſibility and uncommon underſtanding. There was in his perſon, (which was very agreeable) as well as in his behaviour, a certain *naiveté* that was very pleaſing; and at this firſt interview we reliſhed each other's company ſo well, that a ſort of intimacy immediately commenced, and was carried on in a ſucceſſion of parties of pleaſure, in the courſe of which I found him fraught with all the tenderneſs and ſentiment that render the heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined love; a diſpoſition that immediately made me partial to him, while it ſubjected his own heart to all the violent impreſſions of a paſſion, which I little imagined our correſpondence would have produced.

'Nevertheleſs, I was far from being diſpleaſed with my conqueſt, becauſe his perſon and qualifications, as well as his manner of addreſs, were very much to my liking, and recommended him in a particular manner to my affection. Indeed, he made a greater progreſs in my heart than I myſelf ſuſpected; for there was ſomething congenial in our ſouls, which from our firſt meeting I believe had attracted us (unknown to ourſelves) under the notions of friendſhip and regard, and now diſcloſed itſelf in the moſt paſſionate love.

'I listened to his addresses, and we were truly happy. His attachment was the quintessence of tenderness and sincerity, while his generosity knew no bounds. Not contented with having paid twelve hundred pounds on my account, in the space of one fortnight, he would have loaded me with present after present, had I not absolutely refused to accept such expensive marks of his munificence. I was even mortified at those instances of his liberality, which my situation compelled me to receive; lest, being but little acquainted with my disposition, he should suspect me of being interested in my love, and judge my conduct by the malicious reports of common fame which he afterwards owned had at first obtained such credit with him, that he believed our mutual attachment would not be of long duration. But in this particular he was soon undeceived: his heart, though naturally adapted for the melting passion, had hitherto escaped untouched by all the ladies of Italy and France; and therefore the first impressions were the more deeply fixed. As he was unpractised in the ways of common gallantry and deceit, the striking simplicity in his character was the more likely to engage the heart of one who knew the perfidy of the world, and despised all the farce and bombast of fashionable profession, which I had always considered as the phrase of vanity and ostentation, rather than the genuine language of love. Besides, gratitude had a considerable share in augmenting my affection, which manifested itself in such a warm, cordial, and artless manner, as increased his esteem, and rivetted his attachment; for he could easily perceive from the whole tenour of my conduct, that my breast was an utter stranger to craft and dissimulation: yet I was at first fearful of contracting any engagement with him, because being younger than me, he might be more apt to change, and the world might be malicious enough to suppose I had practised upon his inexperience; but conscious of my own integrity, I set slander at defiance, trusting to my own behaviour, and his natural

tural probity, for the continuance of his love. Though we did not live together in the ſame houſe, the greateſt part of our time was ſpent in each other's company; we dined and ſupped at the ſame table, frequented publick places, went upon parties to the country, and never parted but a few hours in the night, which we paſſed in the utmoſt impatience to meet again.

'In this agreeable manner did the days roll on, when my felicity was interrupted by a fit of jealouſy with which I happened to be ſeized. I had contracted an acquaintance with a young married lady; who, though her perſonal attractions were but ſlender, was, upon the whole, an agreeable, chearful, good-natured companion, with a little daſh of the coquette in her compoſition. This woman being in very indigent circumſtances, occaſioned by ſome loſſes her huſband had ſuſtained, no ſooner had an opportunity of ſeeing and converſing with my lover, than ſhe formed a deſign of making a conqueſt of him. I ſhould have forgiven her for this ſcheme, whatever pangs it might have coſt me, had I believed it the effect of real paſſion; but I knew her too well to ſuppoſe her heart was ſuſceptible of love, and accordingly reſented it. In the execution of her plan, ſhe neglected nothing which ſhe thought capable of engaging his attention. She took all opportunities of ſitting near him at table, ogled him in the moſt palpable manner, directed her whole diſcourſe to him, trod upon his toes; nay, I believe, ſqueezed his hand. My blood boiled at her, though my pride, for ſome time, enabled me to conceal my uneaſineſs; till at length her behaviour became ſo arrogant and groſs, that I could no longer ſuppreſs my indignation, and one day told my lover, that I would immediately renounce his correſpondence.

'He was greatly alarmed at this unexpected declaration; and when he underſtood the cauſe of it, aſſured me, that for the future he would never exchange one word with her. Satisfied with this mark of his ſincerity and regard, I releaſed him from this promiſe,

which he could not poſſibly keep, while ſhe and I lived upon any terms; and we continued to viſit each other as uſual, though ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her endeavours to rival me in his affection, and contracted an intimacy with his companion, who ſeemed to entertain a paſſion for her, that ſhe might have the more frequent opportunities of being among us; for ſhe had no objection againſt favouring the addreſſes of both. One evening, I remember, we ſet out in my coach for the opera; and in the way, this inamorata was ſo buſy with her feet, that I was incenſed at her behaviour, and when we arrived at the place, refuſed to alight, but ſetting them down, declared my intention of returning home immediately. She was ſo much pleaſed with this intimation, that ſhe could not conceal the joy ſhe felt at the thoughts of converſing with him, uninterrupted by my preſence; an opportunity with which I had never favoured her before. This open exultation increaſed my anger and anxiety. I went home; but, being ſtill tortured with the reflection of having left them together, adjuſted myſelf in the glaſs, though I was too angry to take notice of my own figure, and without farther delay returned to the opera.

'Having enquired for the box in which they ſat, I took poſſeſſion of one that fronted them, and reconnoitering them, without being perceived, had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing him removed to as great a diſtance from her as the place would permit, and his head turned another way. Compoſed by this examination, I joined them without farther ſcruple, when my young gentleman expreſſed great joy at my appearance, and told me he was determined to have left the entertainment, and come in queſt of me, had I not returned at that inſtant.

'In our way homewards, my rival repeated her uſual hints, and with her large hoop almoſt overſhadowed my lover from my view: upon which my jealouſy and wrath recurred with ſuch violence, that I pulled the ſtring, as a ſignal for the coachman to ſtop, with a

view

view of getting out, and going home afoot; a ſtep which would have afforded a new ſpectacle to the people of Paris. But I reflected in a moment upon the folly of ſuch a reſolution, and ſoon recollected myſelf, by calling my pride to my aſſiſtance. I determined, however, that ſhe ſhould act no more ſcenes of this kind in my preſence, and that ſame night inſiſted upon my lover's dropping all intercourſe and connection with this tormentor! He very chearfully complied with my deſire, and was even glad of an occaſion to break off his acquaintance with a perſon about whom I had plagued him ſo much.

'Thus was I freed from the perſecution of one of thoſe creatures, who, though of little conſequence in themſelves, are yet the peſts of ſociety, and find means to deſtroy that harmony which reigns between two lovers, by the intruſion of a looſe appetite, void of all ſenſibility and diſcretion: having no feeling themſelves, they cannot ſympathize with that of other people, and do miſchief out of mere wantonneſs.

'My lover being obliged to go to England, had ſettled me in a genteel houſe in Paris, with a view of returning when his affairs ſhould be adjuſted; but when the time of his departure approached, he began to be uneaſy at the proſpect of ſeparation, and in order to alleviate his anxiety, deſired me to accompany him to Calais, where we ſtayed together three or four days, during which the dread of parting became more and more intenſe: ſo that we determined upon my following him into England, by the firſt opportunity, where I ſhould live altogether incog. that I might be concealed from the enquiries and attempts of my lord. Even after this reſolution was fixed, we parted with all the agonies of lovers who deſpair of ever meeting again; and the wind blowing very high after he had embarked, increaſed my fears. But by the return of the packet-boat, I was bleſſed with the report of his being ſafe arrived in England, and had the ſatisfaction of peruſing his letters by every poſt.

'My admirer being thus detached from me, my thoughts were entirely employed in concerting some private method of conveying myself to him. As I would not trust myself in the common packet, for fear of being discovered, after having revolved divers schemes, I determined to transport myself in one of the Dutch fishing-boats, though I knew the passage would be hazardous; but, in a case of such interesting concern, I overlooked all danger and inconvenience. Before I put this resolution in practice, I was so fortunate as to meet with a small English vessel that arrived at Calais, with a prisoner of war, in which I embarked with my companion and another lady, who lived with me for some time afterwards: and when we came on board, discovered that the ship was no other than a light collier, and that her whole company amounted to no more than three men. Nevertheless, though the sea was so rough, and the weather so unpromising, that no other boat would venture to put to sea, we set sail, and between two storms, in about three hours arrived in safety in Dover.

'From hence my first companion went to her friends, in the stage-coach, while the other lady and I hired an open post-chaise, (though it snowed very hard) and without any accident performed our journey to London, where I met with my lover, who flew to my arms in all the transports of impatient joy; and, doubtless, I deserved his affection, for the hardships, perils, and difficulties, I had undergone to be with him; for I never scrupled to undertake any thing practicable, in order to demonstrate the sincerity of what I professed.

'In consequence of our plan, I assumed a fictitious name, and never appeared in publick, being fully satisfied and happy in the company and conversation of the man I loved; and when he went into the country, contented myself with his correspondence, which he punctually maintained, in a series of letters equally sensible, sincere, and affectionate.

'Upon his return to town for the remainder of the season,

ſeaſon, he devoted the greateſt part of his time to our mutual enjoyment; left me with reluctance, when he was called away by indiſpenſible buſineſs, and the civility which was due to his acquaintance, and very ſeldom went to any place of publick entertainment, becauſe I could not accompany and ſhare with him in the diverſion: nay, ſo much did I ingroſs his attention, that one evening, after he had been teazed into an agreement of meeting ſome friends at a play, he went thither preciſely at the appointed hour, and as they did not arrive punctually at the very minute, he returned to me immediately, as much rejoiced at his eſcape as if he had met with ſome ſignal deliverance. Nor was his conſtancy inferior to the ardour of his love: we went once together to a ball in the Hay Market, where, in the midſt of a thouſand fine women, whoſe charms were enhanced by the peculiarity of the dreſſes they wore, he remained unſhaken, unſeduced, preſerving his attachment for me, in ſpite of all temptation.

'In the ſummer he provided me with a houſe in the neighbourhood of his own; but the accommodations being bad, and that country affording no other place fit for my reſidence, he brought me home to his own ſeat, and by that ſtep raiſed an univerſal clamour, though I ſaw no company, and led ſuch a ſolitary life, that nothing but exceſſive love could have ſupported my ſpirits: not but that he gave me as much of his time as he could poſſibly ſpare from the neceſſary duties of paying and receiving viſits, together with the avocations of hunting, and other country amuſements, which I could not partake. Formerly, indeed, I uſed to hunt and ſhoot, but I had left off both; ſo that I was now reduced to the alternative of reading, and walking by myſelf; but, *Love made up for all deficiencies to me, who think nothing elſe worth living for!—Had I been bleſſed with a partner for life, who could have loved ſincerely, and inſpired me with a mutual flame, I would have aſked no more of Fate. Intereſt and ambition have no ſhare in my compoſition; love,* *which*

which is pleasure, or pleasure, which is love, makes up the whole. A heart so disposed cannot be devoid of other good qualities; it must be subject to the impressions of humanity and benevolence, and enemy to nothing but itself. This you will give me leave to affirm, in justice to myself; as I have frankly owned my failings and misconduct.

'Towards the end of summer my heart was a little alarmed by a report that prevailed, of my lover's being actually engaged in a treaty of marriage: however, I gave little credit to this rumour, till I was obliged to go to town about business, and there I heard the same information confidently affirmed. Though I still considered it as a vague surmise, I wrote to him an account of what I had heard; and in his answer, which is still in my possession, he assured me with repeated vows and protestations, that the report was altogether false. Satisfied with this declaration, I returned to his house; and though the tale was incessantly thundered in my ears, still believed it void of all foundation, till my suspicion was awaked by a very inconsiderable circumstance.

'One day, on his return from hunting, I perceived he had a very fine pair of Dresden ruffles on his shirt, which I could not suppose he would wear at such a rustick exercise: and therefore my fears immediately took the alarm. When I questioned him about this particular of his dress, his colour changed; and though he attempted to elude my suspicion, by imputing it to a mistake of his servant, I could not rest satisfied with this account of the matter, but enquired into the truth with such eagerness and penetration, that he could not deny he had been to make a visit. By degrees, I even extorted from him a confession, that he had engaged himself farther than he ought to have proceeded, without making me acquainted with his design, though he endeavoured to excuse his conduct, and pacify my displeasure, by saying that the affair would not be brought to bear for a great while, and perhaps might never

come-

come to a determination; but he was in great confusion, indeed hardly knew what he said.

'I would have quitted his house that moment, had not he, before-hand, obtained a promise that I would take no rash resolution of that kind, and put it out of my power to procure any method of conveyance by which I could make my retreat. I gave no vent to reproaches, and only upbraided him with his having permitted me to return in ignorance to the country, after I was once fairly gone; upon which he swore, that he could not bear the thoughts of parting with me. This declaration was a mystery at that time, but I have been since so fully satisfied of his reasons for his conduct, that I heartily acquit him of all injustice to me. And, indeed, it is my sincere opinion, that if ever young man deserved to be happy, he is certainly entitled to that privilege; and if I may be allowed to judge, has an heart susceptible of the most refined enjoyment.

'The violence of the grief and consternation which I suffered from this stroke, having a little subsided, I deliberated with myself about the measures I should take, and determined to leave his house some day when he should be abroad. I was encouraged in this resolution by the advice of our Scotch friend, who came about this time from London, on a visit to his fellow-traveller: we thought such an abrupt departure would be less shocking than to stay and take a formal leave of my lover, whose heart was of such a delicate frame, that after I told him I should one day withdraw myself in his absence, he never came home from the chace, or any other avocation, without trembling with apprehension that I had escaped.

'After he had been some time accustomed to these fears by my previous intimation, I at length decamped in good earnest, though my heart ached upon the occasion, because I left him loving and beloved; for his affection was evident, notwithstanding the step he had taken, by the advice and importunity of all his rela-

'tions,

tions, who laid a disagreeable restraint upon his inclinations, while they consulted his interest in every other particular.

'While I halted in the next great town, until I could be supplied with fresh horses, I was visited by a gentleman who had been formerly intimate with my lover; but a breach had happened in their friendship, and he now came to complain of the treatment he had received. Perceiving that I was not in a humour to listen to his story, he shifted the conversation to my own, and observed, that I had been extremely ill-used. I told him that I was of a different opinion: that it was not only just, but expedient, that a young man of Mr. ———'s fortune should think of making some alliance, to strengthen and support the interest of his family; and that I had nothing to accuse him of but his letting me remain so long in ignorance of his intention. He then gave me to understand, that I was still ignorant of a great part of the ill usage I had received; affirming, that while I lived in his house, he had amused himself with all the common women in that town, to some of whom this gentleman had personally introduced him.

'At first, I could not believe this imputation; but he supported his assertions with so many convincing circumstances, that I could no longer doubt the truth of them; and I felt so much resentment, that my love vanished immediately into air. Instead of proceeding in my journey to London, I went back a considerable way, and sent a message, desiring to see him in a little house, about mid-way between his own habitation and the town from whence I came. He obeyed my summons, and appeared at the place appointed, where I reproached him with great bitterness. He pleaded guilty to the charge, so far as acknowledging that he had corresponded with other women lately, in order to get the better of his affection for me, but the experiment had failed, and he found that he should be for ever miserable.

'I did

'I did not look upon this candid confeſſion as a ſufficient atonement for his paſt diſſimulation; and, in the ſharpneſs of my revenge, demanded a ſettlement, which he peremptorily refuſed, ſo that, for the preſent, we held each other in the utmoſt contempt. Indeed I afterwards deſpiſed myſelf for my condeſcenſion, which was owing to the advice of my companion, ſupported and inflamed by the ſpirit of reſentment. Nevertheleſs, he begged that I would return to his houſe, or ſtay all night where I was; but I was deaf to his intreaties, and after a great deal of ironical civility on my ſide, I took my leave, and went away; yet, before I ſet out, I looked back, and ſaw him on horſeback, with ſuch an air of ſimplicity and truth, as called up a profound ſigh, notwithſtanding all that had paſſed in our converſation.

'Upon my arrival in London, I took lodgings in Leiceſter Fields, and anſwered a letter which I had ſome months before received from my lord, telling him that I would go home to him, without ſtipulating for any terms, to try what effect my confidence would have upon his generoſity. He readily embraced the offer, and took a houſe in St. James's Street, where I propoſed to comply with his humour in every thing that was conſiſtent with my own peace and tranquillity.

'Meanwhile, my lover paſſed his time very diſagreeably in the country, with his friend, of whom (it ſeems) he had conceived ſome jealouſy, which was increaſed by a letter I wrote to that gentleman, till he was made acquainted with the contents, which he read over forty times: and then his paſſion breaking out with more violence than ever, he not only expreſſed his feeling, in an epiſtle which I immediately received, but when he came to town, ſuffered ſuch agonies of deſpair as I had never ſeen before, except in Lord B——. It was then in my power to have taken ample revenge upon him, as well as upon my inſolent rival, who had inſiſted upon my leaving his houſe, in a very abrupt manner, though he abſolutely refuſed to gratify her malice;

malice: for he was now diſpoſed to do any thing for my ſatisfaction: but I knew his worth, and had too much regard for his reputation to adviſe him to act inconſiſtent with his honour.

'About this time, many tender meetings and ſorrowful partings happened between us, till the marriage knot was tied, when he ſent me a bank-note for a thouſand pounds, by way of ſpecimen (as he called it) of his friendſhip, and of what he would do for me, ſhould I ever want his aſſiſtance. This mark of his generoſity I received in a moſt tender billet, which I ſhall never part with, together with his picture ſet in diamonds.

'I now employed my thoughts in keeping meaſures with my lord; we lay in the ſame apartment, and for the firſt four or five months I neither dined or ſupped abroad above twice, and then he knew where I was, and approved of my company. But all this complacency and circumſpection had no effect upon his temper, which remained as capricious and diſſatisfied as ever. Nay, to ſuch a provoking degree did this unhappy humour prevail, that one day, in the preſence of his lawyer, he harangued upon my miſconduct ſince our laſt re-union, and very freely affirmed, that every ſtep I had taken was diametrically oppoſite to his will.

'Conſcious of the pains I had been at to pleaſe him. I was ſo incenſed at theſe unjuſt invectives, that ſtarting up, I told him he was a little dirty fellow; and would have left the houſe immediately, had not his lawyer and others, who were in the next room, interpoſed, and by dint of argument and importunity diverted me from my purpoſe. By the bye, I have been informed by a perſon of rank, that my lord diſcovered exactly the ſame diſpoſition in his father's life-time, and only changes the ſubject of his complaint from the word *father* to that of *wife*. Indeed, he takes all opportunities of plaguing my dear parent, as he has juſt ſagacity enough to know, that this is the moſt effectual way he can take to diſtreſs me.

'After repeated trials, I have given up all hopes of making him happy, or of finding myſelf eaſy in my ſituation; and live with him at preſent to avoid a greater inconvenience. Not that his ill-nature is all the grievance of which I complain: excluſive of the perſonal diſguſt I entertain for him, his folly is of that ſpecies which diſobliges rather than diverts, and his vanity and affectation altogether intolerable; for he actually believes himſelf, or at leaſt would impoſe himſelf upon mankind, as a pattern in gallantry and taſte; and, in point of buſineſs, a perſon of infinite ſagacity and penetration; but the moſt ridiculous part of his character is his pretended talent for politicks, in which he ſo deeply concerns himſelf, that he has diſmiſſed many a good ſervant becauſe he ſuſpected him of having wrong connections; a theme upon which he has often quarrelled with me, even almoſt to parting, accuſing me with holding correſpondence with the Earls of B—— and C——, and Mr. H. V——, though I never had the leaſt acquaintance with any of theſe gentlemen, except the Earl of C——, to whom I have not ſpoken for theſe ten years paſt.

'In ſhort, I have often been at a loſs to know, whether he was more mad or malicious in thoſe fits of enthuſiaſm, wherein he ſeemed tranſported with zeal for the commonwealth, and tormented me with his admonitions, out of all temper and patience. At length, however, I contrived an expedient which freed me from theſe troubleſome expoſtulations, and ſilenced him effectually on the ſcore of politicks. This was no other than an open avowal of being connected with all thoſe people whom I have named. Indeed, I knew him too well to believe there was any thing ſolid in his intention or profeſſions, even when he carried himſelf ſo far as to demand a private audience with the king, in order to communicate a ſcheme for ſuppreſſing the rebellion; and that being denied, ſolicited the Duke of D——'s intereſt for permiſſion to raiſe and head a regiment of Kentiſh ſmugglers; nay, to ſuch a pitch did his loy-

alty ſoar, that he purchaſed a firelock of particular mechaniſm, calculated for the ſafety of the bearer, in caſe he had been placed centinel at his majeſty's door; and kept his horſes ready capariſoned, with a view of attending his ſovereign to the field. Notwithſtanding all theſe pompous preparations, had he been put to the proof, he would have infallibly crept out of his engagement, through ſome ſneaking evaſion, his imagination being very fertile in ſuch ſaving pretences. Yet he will talk ſometimes ſo fervently, and even ſenſibly, on the ſubject, that a ſtranger would miſtake him for a man of underſtanding, and determined zeal for the good of his country.

'Since my laſt return to his houſe, that act of parliament paſſed, by which he was enabled to pay his debts, and among the reſt, a thouſand pounds of my contracting, the only burden of that kind I ever intailed upon him, excluſive of my pin-money, which was never regularly paid; nor would he have been ſubject to this, had he not, by his perſecution and purſuit, expoſed me to an extraordinary expence. I have alſo had it in my power to reward ſome of my faithful Abigails; in particular, to relieve from extreme diſtreſs that maid to whom (as I have already obſerved) Lord B—— granted an annuity, which ſhe had ſold: ſo that ſhe was reduced to the moſt abject poverty, and I found her in a diſmal hole, with two infants periſhing for want; a ſpectacle which drew tears from my eyes, and indeed could not but make deep impreſſion upon a heart like mine, which the miſery of my fellow creatures never failed to melt.

'Nor did I upon this occaſion forget the attachment and fidelity of my other woman Mrs. S——, who hearing I was robbed in my paſſage through Flanders, had generouſly relinquiſhed the allowance I had ſettled upon her at parting. The exerciſe of ſuch acts of humanity and benevolence, and the pleaſure of ſeeing my dear and tender parent often, in ſome meaſure alleviate the chagrin to which I am ſubject, from the diſagree-

able diſpoſition of my lord, who, conſiſtent with his former inconſiſtency, upon our laſt reconciliation chearfully agreed to a propoſal I made of having concerts in the houſe, and even approved of the ſcheme with marks of particular ſatisfaction: but before one half of the winter was expired, he found means to baniſh all the company, beginning with Lord R—— B——; who as he walked up ſtairs one evening, was ſtopped by a footman, who plainly told him he had orders to ſay to him in particular, that his lordſhip was not at home; yet, the very next day, perceiving that nobleman and me walking together in the Park, he joined us with an air of alacrity, as if no ſuch thing had happened; and even behaved to Lord R—— with the moſt fawning complaiſance. His deportment was equally abſurd and impertinent to the reſt of his friends, who forſook us gradually, being tired of maintaining any friendly communication with ſuch a diſagreeable compoſition of ignorance and arrogance. For my own part, I look upon him as utterly incorrigible; and as fate hath ſubjected me to his power, endeavour to make the bitter draught go down, by detaching myſelf as much as poſſible, from the ſuppoſition that there is any ſuch exiſtence upon earth. Indeed, if I had not fatal experience of the contrary, I ſhould be apt to believe that ſuch a character is not to be found among the ſons of men; becauſe his conduct is altogether unaccountable by the known rules and maxims of life, and falls entirely under the poet's obſervation, when he ſays—

"'Tis true, no meaning puzzles more than wit.'

Her ladyſhip having thus concluded her ſtory, to the entertainment of the company, and the admiration of Peregrine, who expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at the variety of adventures ſhe had undergone, which was ſuch as he thought ſufficient to deſtroy the moſt hardy and robuſt conſtitution, and therefore infinitely more than enough to overwhelm one of her delicate frame; one of the gentlemen preſent roundly taxed her with want of can-

 dour,

dour, in ſuppreſſing ſome circumſtances of her life, which he thought eſſential in the conſideration of her character.

She reddened at this peremptory charge, which had an evident effect upon the countenances of the whole audience, when the accuſer proceeded to explain his imputation, by obſerving, that, in the courſe of her narration, ſhe had omitted to mention a thouſand acts of uncommon charity, of which he himſelf knew her to be guilty; and that ſhe had concealed a great many advantageous propoſals of marriage, which ſhe might have accepted before ſhe was engaged.

The company were agreeably undeceived by this explanation; which her ladyſhip acknowledged in very polite terms, as a compliment equally genteel and unexpected: and our hero, after having teſtified the ſenſe he had of her complaiſance and condeſcenſion, in regaling him with a mark of her confidence and eſteem, took his leave, and went home in a ſtate of confuſion and perplexity; for, from the circumſtances of the tale he had heard, he plainly perceived that her ladyſhip's heart was too delicate to receive ſuch incenſe, as he, in the capacity of an admirer, could at preſent pay; becauſe, though he had in ſome meaſure abridged the empire of Emilia in his own breaſt, it was not in his power to reſtrain it ſo effectually, but that it would interfere with any other ſovereign whom his thoughts ſhould adopt; and, unleſs Lady —— could engroſs his whole love, time, and attention, he foreſaw that it would be impoſſible for him to ſupport the paſſion which he might have the good fortune to inſpire. He was, moreover, deterred from declaring his love, by the fate of her former admirers, who ſeemed to have been wound up to a degree of enthuſiaſm, that looked more like the effect of enchantment, than the inſpiration of human attractions; an extaſy of paſſion which he durſt not venture to undergo. He therefore reſolved to combat with the impreſſions he had already received, and, if poſſible, cultivate her friendſhip without ſoliciting

her

her affection: but, before he could fix upon this determination, he desired to know the footing on which he stood in her opinion; and by the intelligence of Crabtree, obtained in the usual manner, understood that her sentiments of him were very favourable, though without the least tincture of love. He would have been transported with joy, had her thoughts of him been of a more tender texture; though his reason was better pleased with the information he received: in consequence of which he mustered up the ideas of his first passion, and set them in opposition to those of this new and dangerous attachment; by which means he kept the balance in equilibrio, and his bosom tolerably quiet.

CHAP. X.

He persuades Cadwallader to assume the Character of a Magician, in which he acquires a great Share of Reputation, by his Responses to three Females of Distinction, who severally consult the Researches of his Art.

HIS heart being thus, as it were, suspended between two objects, that lessened the force of each other's attraction, he took this opportunity of enjoying some respite, and for the present detached his sentiments from both; resolving to indulge himself in the exercise of that practical satire, which was so agreeable and peculiar to his disposition. In this laudable determination he was confirmed by the repeated suggestions of his friend Cadwallader, who taxed him with letting his talents rust in indolence, and stimulated his natural vivacity, with a succession of fresh discoveries in the world of scandal.

'Peregrine was now seized with a strange whim, and when he communicated the conceit to Cadwallader, it in a moment acquired his approbation. This notion he imparted in a proposal, to subject the town to their ridicule, by giving responses in the character of a professed conjuror, to be personated by the old misanthrope, whose aspect was extremely well calculated for the purpose. The plan was immediately adjusted in all its parts; an apartment hired in a house accommo-

dated with a publick ſtair, ſo that people might have free ingreſs and egreſs, without being expoſed to obſervation; and this tenement being furniſhed with the apparatus of a magician, ſuch as globes, teleſcopes, a magic-lanthorn, a ſkeleton, a dried monkey, together with the ſkins of an alligator, otter, and ſnake, the conjuror himſelf took poſſeſſion of his caſtle, after having diſtributed printed advertiſements, containing the particulars of his undertaking.

'These bills ſoon operated according to the wiſh of the projectors. As the price of the oracle was fixed at half a guinea, the publick naturally concluded that the author was no common fortune-teller; and the very next day, Peregrine found ſome ladies of his quality acquaintance, infected with the deſire of making an experiment upon the ſkill of this new conjuror, who pretended to be juſt arrived from the Mogul's empire, where he had learned the art from a Brachman philoſopher. Our young gentleman affected to talk of the pretenſions of this ſage with ridicule and contempt, and with ſeeming reluctance undertook to attend them to his apartment, obſerving that it would be a very eaſy matter to detect the fellow's ignorance, and no more than common juſtice to chaſtiſe him for his preſumption. Though he could eaſily perceive a great fund of credulity in the company, they affected to eſpouſe his opinion, and under the notion of a frolick, agreed, that one particular lady ſhould endeavour to baffle his art, by appearing before him in the dreſs of her woman, who ſhould at the ſame time perſonate her miſtreſs, and be treated as ſuch by our adventurer, who promiſed to ſquire them to the place. Theſe meaſures being concerted, and the appointment fixed for the next audience-day, Peregrine furniſhed his friend with the neceſſary information; and when the hour of aſſignation arrived, conducted his charge to this oraculous ſeat.

They were admitted by our hero's valet de chambre, whoſe viſage being naturally meagre and ſwarthy, was adorned with artificial whiſkers; ſo that he became the

Perſian

Persian dress which he wore, and seemed a very proper master of the ceremonies to an oriental necromancer. Having crossed his arms upon his breast, with an inclination of the head, he stalked in solemn silence before them into the penetralia of the temple, where they found the conjuror sitting at a table, provided with pen, ink, and paper, divers books, and mathematical instruments, and a long white wand lying across the whole. He was habited in a black gown and fur-cap: his countenance, over and above a double proportion of philosophick gravity, which he had assumed for the occasion, was improved by a thick beard, white as snow, that reached to his middle; upon each shoulder sat a prodigious large black cat, which had been tutored for the purpose.

Such a figure, which would have startled Peregrine himself, had not he been concerned in the mystery, could not fail to make an impression upon those whom he accompanied. The fictitious chambermaid, in spite of all her natural pertness and vivacity, changed colour when she entered the room, while the pretended lady, whose intellects were not quite so enlightened, began to tremble in every joint, and ejaculate petitions to Heaven for her safety. Their conductor advancing to the table, presented his offering, and pointing to the maid, told him that lady desired to know what would be her destiny in point of marriage. The philosopher, without lifting up his eyes to view the person in whose behalf he was consulted, turned his ear to one of the sable familiars that purred upon his shoulder, and taking up the pen, wrote upon a detached slip of paper these words, which Peregrine, at the desire of the ladies, repeated aloud. 'Her destiny will, in a great measure, depend upon what happened to her about nine o'clock in the morning, on the third day of last December.'

This sentence was no sooner pronounced, than the counterfeit lady screamed, and ran out into the antichamber, exclaiming—'Christ have mercy upon us! Sure

ſure he is the devil incarnate!' Her miſtreſs, who followed her with great conſternation, inſiſted upon knowing the tranſaction to which the reſponſe alluded; and Mrs. Abigail, after ſome recollection, gave her to underſtand that ſhe had an admirer, who, on that very hour and day mentioned by the cunning man, had addreſſed himſelf to her in a ſerious propoſal of marriage. This explanation, however, was more ingenious than candid; for the admirer was no other than the identical Mr. Pickle himſelf, who was a mere dragon among the chambermaids, and in his previous information communicated to his aſſociate, had given an account of this aſſignation, with which he had been favoured by the damſel in queſtion.

Our hero ſeeing his company very much affected with this circumſtance of the wizard's art, which had almoſt frighted both miſtreſs and maid into hyſterick fits, pretended to laugh them out of their fears, by obſerving, that there was nothing extraordinary in this inſtance of his knowledge, which might have been acquired by ſome of thoſe ſecret emiſſaries whom ſuch impoſtors are obliged to employ for intelligence, or imparted by the lover himſelf, who had perhaps come to conſult him about the ſucceſs of his amour. Encouraged by this obſervation, or rather prompted by an inſatiable curioſity, which was proof againſt all ſorts of apprehenſion, the diſguiſed lady returned to the magician's own apartment, and aſſuming the air of a pert chambermaid—' Mr. Conjuror,' ſaid ſhe, ' now you have ſatisfied my miſtreſs, will you be ſo good as to tell me, if ever I ſhall be married?' The ſage, without the leaſt heſitation, favoured her with an anſwer in the following words. ' You cannot be married before you are a widow; and whether or not that will ever be the caſe, is a queſtion which my art cannot reſolve, becauſe my foreknowledge exceeds not the term of thirty years.'

This reply, which at once cut her off from the pleaſing proſpect of ſeeing herſelf independent in the enjoyment

ment of youth and fortune, in a moment clouded her aspect; all her good-humour was overcast, and she went away, without farther enquiry, muttering, in the rancour of her chagrin, that he was a silly impertinent fellow, and a mere quack in his profession. Notwithstanding the prejudice of this resentment, her conviction soon recurred; and when the report of his answers was made to those confederates by whom she had been deputed to make trial of his skill, they were universally persuaded that his art was altogether supernatural, though each affected to treat it with contempt, resolving, in her own breast, to have recourse to him in private.

In the mean time, the maid, though laid under the most peremptory injunctions of secresy, was so full of the circumstance which related to her own conduct, that she extolled his prescience, in whispers to all her acquaintance, assuring them, that he had told her all the particulars of her life; so that his fame was almost instantaneously conveyed through a thousand different channels, to all parts of the town; and the very next time he assumed the chair, his doors were besieged by curious people of all sects and denominations.

Being an old practitioner in this art, Cadwallader knew it would be impossible for him to support his reputation in the promiscuous exercise of fortune-telling, because every person that should come to consult him would expect a sample of his skill, relating to things past; and it could not be supposed that he was acquainted with the private concerns of every individual who might apply to him for that purpose: he therefore ordered his minister, whom he distinguished by the name of Hadgi Rourk, to signify to all those who demanded entrance, that his price was half a guinea; and that all such as were not disposed to gratify him with that consideration, would do well to leave the passage free for the rest.

This declaration succeeded to his wish; for this congregation consisted chiefly of footmen, chambermaids,

apprentices,

apprentices, and the lower claſs of tradeſmen, who could not afford to purchaſe preſcience at ſuch a price; ſo that, after fruitleſs offers of ſhillings and half crowns, they dropped off one by one, and left the field open for cuſtomers of an higher rank.

The firſt perſon of this ſpecies who appeared was dreſſed like the wife of a ſubſtantial tradeſman; but this diſguiſe could not ſcreen her from the penetration of the conjuror; who at firſt ſight knew her to be one of the ladies of whoſe coming he had been apprized by Peregrine, on the ſuppoſition that their curioſity was rather inflamed than allayed by the intelligence they had received from his firſt client. This lady approached the philoſopher with that intrepidity of countenance ſo conſpicuous in matrons of her dignified ſphere, and in a ſoft voice, aſked with a ſimper, of what complexion her next child would be? The necromancer, who was perfectly well acquainted with her private hiſtory, forthwith delivered his reſponſe in the following queſtion, written in the uſual form—'How long has Pompey the black been diſmiſſed from your ladyſhip's ſervice?'

Endued as ſhe was with a great ſhare of that fortitude which is diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of effrontery, her face exhibited ſome ſigns of ſhame and confuſion at the receipt of this oracular interrogation, by which ſhe was convinced of his extraordinary intelligence; and accoſting him in a very ſerious tone—'Doctor,' ſaid ſhe, 'I perceive you are a perſon of great abilities in the art you profeſs; and therefore, without pretending to diſſemble, I will own you have touched the true ſtring of my apprehenſions. I am perſuaded I need not be more particular in my enquiries. Here is a purſe of money; take it, and deliver me from a moſt alarming and uneaſy ſuſpenſe.' So ſaying, ſhe depoſited her offering upon the table, and waited for his anſwer with a face of fearful expectation, while he was employed in writing this ſentence for her peruſal—'Though I ſee into the womb of time, the proſpect is not perfectly diſtinct; the ſeeds of future events lie mingled and confuſed;

fused: so that I am under the necessity of assisting my divination in some cases, by analogy and human intelligence; and cannot possibly satisfy your present doubts, unless you will condescend to make me privy to all those occurrences which you think might have interfered with the cause of your apprehension.'

The lady having read the declaration, affected a small emotion of shyness and repugnance, and seating herself upon a settee, after having cautiously informed herself of the privacy of the apartment, gave such a detail of the succession of her lovers, as amazed while it entertained the necromancer, as well as his friend Pickle, who from a closet, in which he had concealed himself, over-heard every syllable of her confession. Cadwallader listened to her story with a look of infinite importance and sagacity; and after a short pause told her, that he would not pretend to give a categorical answer, until he should have deliberated maturely upon the various circumstances of the affair; but if she would take the trouble of honouring him with another visit on his next publick day, he hoped he should be able to give her full satisfaction. Conscious of the importance of her doubts, she could not help commending his caution, and took her leave, with a promise of returning at the appointed time: then the conjuror being joined by his associate, they gave a loose to their mirth, which having indulged, they began to concert measures for inflicting some disgraceful punishment on the shameless and insatiate termagant who had so impudently avowed her own prostitution.

They were interrupted, however, in their conference, by the arrival of a new guest, who being announced by Hadgi, our hero retreated to his lurking place, and Cadwallader resumed his mysterious appearance. This new client, though she hid her face in a mask, could not conceal herself from the knowledge of the conjuror, who by her voice recognized her to be an unmarried lady of his own acquaintance. She had, within a small compass of time, made herself remark-

able for two adventures, which had not at all ſucceeded to her expectation: being very much addicted to play, ſhe had, at a certain rout, indulged that paſſion to ſuch exceſs, as not only got the better of her juſtice, but alſo of her circumſpection; ſo that ſhe was unfortunately detected in her endeavours to appropriate to herſelf what was not lawfully her due. This ſmall ſlip was attended with another indiſcretion, which had likewiſe an unlucky effect upon her reputation. She had been favoured with the addreſſes of one of thoſe hopeful heirs, who ſwarm and ſwagger about town under the denomination of Bucks; and in the confidence of his honour conſented to be one of a *partie* that made an excurſion as far as Windſor, thinking herſelf ſecured from ſcandal by the company of another young lady, who had alſo condeſcended to truſt her perſon to the protection of her admirer. The two gallants, in the courſe of this expedition, were ſaid to uſe the moſt perfidious means to intoxicate the paſſions of their miſtreſſes, by mixing drugs with their wine, which inflamed their conſtitutions to ſuch a degree, that they fell an eaſy ſacrifice to the appetites of their conductors, who, upon their return to town, were ſo baſe and inhuman as to boaſt among their companions of the exploit they had atchieved. Thus the ſtory was circulated, with a thouſand additional circumſtances, to the prejudice of the ſufferers, one of whom had thought proper to withdraw into the country, until the ſcandal raiſed at her expence ſhould ſubſide; while the other, who was not ſo eaſily put out of countenance, reſolved to out-face the report, as a treacherous aſperſion, invented by her lover as an excuſe for his own inconſtancy; and actually appeared in publick, as uſual, till ſhe found herſelf neglected by the greateſt part of her acquaintance.

In conſequence of this diſgrace, which ſhe knew not whether to impute to the card affair, or to the laſt *faux pas* ſhe had committed, ſhe now came to conſult the conjuror, and ſignified her errand, by aſking whether the cauſe of her preſent diſquiet was of the town or the country.

country. Cadwallader at once perceiving her allusion, answered her question in these terms—' This honest world will forgive a young gamester for indiscretion at play, but a favour granted to a babbling coxcomb is an unpardonable offence.' This response she received with equal astonishment and chagrin: and, fully convinced of the necromancer's omniscience, implored his advice touching the retrieval of her reputation: upon which he counselled her to wed with the first opportunity. She seemed so well pleased with his admonition, that she gratified him with a double fee, and dropping a low curtsey, retired.

Our undertakers now thought it high time to silence the oracle for the day; and Hadgi was accordingly ordered to exclude all comers, while Peregrine and his friend renewed the deliberations which had been interrupted, and settled a plan of operations for the next occasion; meanwhile it was resolved, that Hadgi should not only exercise his own talents, but also employ inferior agents, in procuring general intelligence for the support of their schemes; that the expence of this ministry should be defrayed from the profits of their professions, and the remainder be distributed to poor families in distress.

CHAP. XI.

Peregrine and his Friend Cadwallader proceed in the exercise of the Mystery of Fortune-Telling, in the Course of which they atchieve various Adventures.

THESE preliminaries being adjusted, our hero forthwith repaired to a card assembly, which was frequented by some of the most notable gossips in town, and having artfully turned the conversation upon the subject of the fortune-teller, whose talents he pretended to ridicule, incensed their itch of knowing secrets to such a degree of impatience, that their curiosity became flagrant, and he took it for granted, that all or some of them would visit Albumazar on his very first visiting-day. While Peregrine was thus engaged, this associate made his appearance in another convocation

of faſhionable people, where he ſoon had the pleaſure of hearing the conjuror brought upon the carpet by a elderly gentlewoman, remarkable for her inquiſitive diſpoſition, who addreſſing herſelf to Cadwallader, aſked, by the help of the finger-alphabet, if he knew any thing of the magician that made ſuch a noiſe in town. The miſanthrope anſwered as uſual, in a ſurly tone—' By your queſtion, you muſt either take me for a pimp or an idiot. What, in the name of nonſenſe, ſhould I know of ſuch a raſcal, unleſs I were to court his acquaintance with a view to feaſt my own ſpleen, in ſeeing him fool the whole nation out of their money! Though, I ſuppoſe, his chief profits ariſe from his practice, in quality of pander. All fortune-tellers are bawds, and for that reaſon are ſo much followed by people of faſhion. This fellow, I warrant, has got ſundry convenient apartments for the benefit of procreation; for it is not to be ſuppoſed that thoſe who viſit him on the pretence of conſulting his ſupernatural art, can be ſuch fools, ſuch drivellers, as to believe that he can actually prognoſticate future events.'

The company, according to his expectation, imputed his remarks to the rancour of his diſpoſition, which could not bear to think that any perſon upon earth was wiſer than himſelf; and his ears were regaled with a thouſand inſtances of the conjuror's wonderful preſcience, for which he was altogether indebted to fiction. Some of theſe ſpecimens being communicated to him by way of appeal to his opinion—' They are,' ſaid he, ' mere phantoms of ignorance and credulity, ſwelled up in the repetition, like thoſe unſubſtantial bubbles which the boys blow up in ſoap-ſuds with a tobacco-pipe. And this will ever be the caſe in the propagation of all extraordinary intelligence: the imagination naturally magnifies every object that falls under it's cognizance, eſpecially thoſe that concern the paſſions of fear and admiration; and when the occurrence comes to be rehearſed, the vanity of the relater exaggerates every circumſtance, in order to enhance the importance of the commu-

communication. Thus an incident which is but barely uncommon, often gains ſuch acceſſion in it's progreſs through the fancies and mouths of thoſe who repreſent it, that the original fact cannot poſſibly be diſtinguiſhed. This obſervation might be proved and illuſtrated by a thouſand undeniable examples, out of which I ſhall only ſelect one inſtance, for the entertainment and edification of the company. A very honeſt gentleman, remarkable for the gravity of his deportment, was one day in a certain coffee-houſe accoſted by one of his particular friends; who, taking him by the hand, expreſſed uncommon ſatisfaction in ſeeing him abroad, and in good health, after the dangerous and portentous malady he had undergone. Surprized at this ſalutation, the gentleman replied, it was true he had been a little out of order over night, but there was nothing at all extraordinary in his indiſpoſition.—"Jeſu, not extraordinary!" cried the other, "when you vomited three black crows!" This ſtrange exclamation the grave gentleman at firſt miſtook for raillery, though his friend was no joker; but perceiving in him all the marks of ſincerity and aſtoniſhment, he ſuddenly changed his opinion, and after a ſhort reverie, taking him aſide, expreſſed himſelf in theſe words: "Sir, it is not unknown to you that I am at preſent engaged in a treaty of marriage, which would have been ſettled long ago, had it not been retarded by the repeated machinations of a certain perſon who profeſſed himſelf my rival. Now I am fully perſuaded that this affair of the three crows is a ſtory of his invention, calculated to prejudice me in the opinion of the lady, who, to be ſure, would not chuſe to marry a man who has a rookery in his bowels; and therefore I muſt inſiſt upon knowing your author of this ſcandalous report, that I may be able to vindicate my character from the malicious aſperſion." His friend, who thought the demand was very reaſonable, told him without heſitation, that he was made acquainted with the circumſtance of his diſtemper by Mr. Such-a-one, their common acquain-

 tance;

tance: upon which the perſon who conceived himſelf injured, went immediately in queſt of his ſuppoſed defamer, and having found him—"Pray, Sir," ſaid he, with a peremptory tone. "who told you that I vomited three black crows?"—"Three!" anſwered the gentleman, "I mentioned two only."—"Zounds, Sir!" cried the other, incenſed at his indifference. "you will find the two too many, if you refuſe to diſcover the villainous ſource of ſuch calumny." The gentleman, ſurprized at his heat, ſaid he was ſorry to find he had been the accidental inſtrument of giving him offence, but tranſlated the blame (if any there was) from himſelf to a third perſon, to whoſe information he owed his knowledge of the report. The plaintiff, according to the direction he received, repaired to the houſe of the accuſed; and his indignation being inflamed at finding the ſtory had already circulated among his acquaintance, he told him, with evident marks of diſpleaſure, that he was come to pluck the ſame brace of crows which he ſaid he had diſgorged. The defendant ſeeing him very much irritated, poſitively denied that he had mentioned a brace: "One, indeed," ſaid he, "I own I took notice of, upon the authority of your own phyſician, who gave me an account of it this morning."—"By the Lord!" cried the ſufferer in a rage, which he could no longer contain, "that raſcal has been ſuborned by my rival to ſlander my character in this manner; but I'll be revenged, if there be either law or equity in England!" He had ſcarce pronounced theſe words, when the doctor happened to enter the room: when his exaſperated patient lifting up his cane —"Sirrah," ſaid he, "if I live, I'll make that black crow the blackeſt circumſtance of thy whole life and converſation!" The phyſician, confounded at this addreſs, aſſured him that he was utterly ignorant of his meaning; and when the other gentleman explained it, abſolutely denied the charge, affirming he had ſaid no more than that he had vomited a quantity of ſomething as black as a crow. The landlord of the houſe ac-

knowledged

knowledged that he might have been miſtaken; and thus the whole myſtery was explained.'

The company ſeemed to reliſh the ſtory of the three black crows, which they conſidered as an impromptu of Cadwallader's own invention; but, granting it to be true, they unanimouſly declared that it could have no weight in invalidating the teſtimony of divers perſons of honour, who had been witneſſes of the magician's ſupernatural ſkill: On the next day of conſultation, the necromancer being in the chair, and his friend behind the curtain, the outward door was ſcarce open, when a female viſitant flounced in, and diſcovered to the magician the features of one of thoſe inquiſitive ladies, whoſe curioſity he knew his confederate had arouzed in the manner above deſcribed. She addreſſed herſelf to him with a familiar air, obſerving, that ſhe had heard much of his great knowledge, and was come to be a witneſs of his art, which ſhe deſired him to diſplay, in declaring what he knew to be her ruling paſſion.

Cadwallader, who was no ſtranger to her diſpoſition, aſſumed the pen without heſitation, and furniſhed her with an anſwer, importing, that the love of money predominated, and ſcandal poſſeſſed the next place in her heart. Far from being offended at his freedom, ſhe commended his frankneſs with a ſmile; and, ſatisfied of his uncommon talents, expreſſed a deſire of being better acquainted with his perſon; nay, ſhe began to catechiſe him upon the private hiſtory of divers great families, in which he happened to be well verſed; and he, in a myſterious manner, dropped ſuch artful hints of his knowledge, that ſhe was amazed at his capacity, and actually aſked if his art was communicable. The conjuror replied in the affirmative; but, at the ſame time, gave her to underſtand, that it was attainable by thoſe only who were pure and undefiled in point of chaſtity and honour; or ſuch as, by a long courſe of penitence, had weaned themſelves from all attachments to the fleſh. She not only diſapproved, but ſeemed to

doubt the truth of this aſſertion; telling him, with a look of diſdain, that his art was not worth having, if one could not uſe it for the benefit of one's pleaſure: ſhe had even penetration enough to take notice of an inconſiſtency in what he had advanced; and aſked, why he himſelf exerciſed his knowledge for hire, if he was ſo much detached from all worldly concerns. "Come, come, doctor,' added ſhe, 'you are in the right to be cautious againſt impertinent curioſity; but, perhaps, I may make it worth your while to be communicative.'

Theſe overtures were interrupted by a rap at the door, ſignifying the approach of another client; upon which the lady enquired for his private paſſage, through which ſhe might retire, without the riſk of being ſeen; when ſhe underſtood he was deficient in that convenience, ſhe withdrew into an empty room, adjoining to the audience chamber, in order to conceal herſelf from the obſervation of the new comer. This was no other than the inamorata, who came by appointment to receive the ſolution of her doubts; and the miſanthrope, glad of an opportunity to expoſe her to the cenſure of ſuch an indefatigable miniſter of fame as the perſon, who (he knew) would liſten from the next apartment, laid her under the neceſſity of refreſhing his remembrance with a recapitulation of her former confeſſion, which was almoſt finiſhed, when ſhe was alarmed by a noiſe at the door, occaſioned by two gentlemen, who attempted to enter by force.

Terrified at this uproar, which diſconcerted the magician himſelf, ſhe ran for ſhelter into the place which was pre-occupied by the other lady, who hearing this diſturbance, had cloſed the window-ſhutters, that ſhe might have the better chance of remaining unknown. Here they enſconced themſelves, in the utmoſt conſternation, while the necromancer, after ſome recollection, ordered Hadgi to open the door, and admit the rioters, who (he hoped) would be over-awed by the authority of his appearance. The janitor had no ſooner obeyed his inſtructions, than in ruſhed a young libertine, who

had

had been for some time on the town, together with his tutor, who was a worn-out debauchee, well known to the magician. They were both in that degree of intoxication necessary to prepare such dispositions for what they commonly call frolicks, and the sober part of mankind feel to be extravagant outrages against the laws of their country, and the peace of their fellow-subjects. Having staggered up to the table, the senior, who undertook to be spokesman, saluted Cadwallader with—'How do'st do, old Capricorn? Thou seem'st to be a most venerable pimp, and, I doubt not, hast abundance of discretion. Here is this young whore-master (a true chip of the old venerable block his father) and myself, come for a comfortable cast of thy function. I don't mean that stale pretence of conjuring: damn futurity! let us live for the present, old Haly. Conjure me up a couple of hale wenches, and, I warrant, we shall get into the magick circle in a twinkling. What says Galileo? What says the reverend Brahe? Here is a purse, you pimp: hark, how it chinks! This is sweeter than the musick of the spheres.'

Our necromancer, perplexed at this rencounter, made no reply; but taking up his wand, waved it round his head in a very mysterious motion, with a view of intimidating these forward visitants, who, far from being awed by this sort of evolution, became more and more obstreperous, and even threatened to pull him by the beard if he would not immediately comply with their desire. Had he called his associate, or even Hadgi, to his aid, he knew he could have soon calmed their turbulence; but, being unwilling to run the risk of a discovery, or even of a riot; he bethought himself of chastising their insolence in another manner, that would be less hazardous, and rather more effectual. In consequence of this suggestion, he pointed his wand towards the door of the apartment in which the ladies had taken sanctuary; and the two rakes, understanding the hint, rushed in without hesitation.

The females, finding their place of retreat taken by

assault, ran about the room in great consternation, and were immediately taken prisoners by the assailants, who pulling them towards the windows, opened the shutters at the same instant of time, when (strange to tell!) one of the heroes discovered in the prize he had made, the very wife of his bosom: and his companion perceived that he had stumbled in the dark upon his own mother. Their mutual astonishment was unspeakable at this eclaircissement, which produced an universal silence for the space of several minutes. During this pause the ladies having recollected themselves, an expostulation was begun by the elder of the two, who roundly took her son to task for his disorderly life, which laid her under the disagreeable necessity of watching his motions, and detecting him in such an infamous place.

While the careful mother thus exercised her talent for reprehension, the hopeful young gentleman, with an hand in each fob, stood whistling an opera-tune, without seeming to pay the most profound regard to his parent's reproof; and the other lady, in imitation of such a consummate pattern, began to open upon her husband, whom she bitterly reproached with his looseness and intemperance, demanding to know what he had to alledge in alleviation of his present misconduct. The surprize occasioned by such an unexpected meeting had already in a great measure destroyed the effects of the wine he had so plentifully drank, and the first use he made of his recovered sobriety, was to revolve within himself the motives that could possibly induce his wife to give him the rendezvous in this manner. As he had good reason to believe she was utterly void of jealousy, he naturally placed this rencontre to the account of another passion; and his chagrin was not at all impaired, by the effrontery with which she now presumed to reprimand him. He listened to her, therefore, with a grave or rather grim aspect; and to the question with which she concluded her rebuke, answered with great composure—' All that I have to alledge, Madam, is, that the bawd has commited a mistake, in conse-

consequence of which we are both disappointed: and so, ladies, your humble servant.' So saying, he retired with manifest confusion in his looks; and as he passed through the audience-chamber, eyeing the conjuror askance, pronounced the epithet of *precious rascal!* with great emphasis. Meanwhile the junior, like a dutiful child, handed his mamma to her chair; and the other client, after having reviled the necromancer, because he could not foresee this event, went away in a state of mortification.

The coast being clear, Peregrine came forth from his den, and congratulated his friend upon the peaceable issue of the adventure which he had overheard: but, that he might not be exposed to such inconvenience for the future, they resolved, that a grate should be fixed in the middle of the outward door, through which the conjuror himself might reconnoitre all the visitants before their admission; so that, to those whose appearance he might not like, Hadgi should, without opening, give notice that his master was engaged. By this expedient, too, they provided against those difficulties which Cadwallader must have encountered, in giving satisfaction to strangers whom he did not know: for the original intention of the founders was to confine the practice of their art to people of fashion only, most of whom were personally known to the counterfeit magician and his coadjutors.

Indeed these associates, Cadwallader in particular, notwithstanding his boasted insight into the characters of life, never imagined that his pretended skill would be consulted by any but the weaker minded of the female sex, incited by that spirit of curiosity which he knew was implanted in their nature: but, in the course of his practice, he found himself cultivated in his preternatural capacity by people of all sexes, complexions, and degrees of reputation, and had occasion to observe, that when the passions are concerned, howsoever cool, cautious, and deliberate, the disposition may otherwise be, there is nothing so idle, frivolous, or absurd, to

which

which they will not apply for encouragement and gratification. The laſt occurrence, according to the hopes and expectation of the confederates, was whiſpered about by the ladies concerned, in ſuch a manner, that the whole affair was, in a few days, the univerſal topick of diſcourſe, in which it was retailed with numberleſs embelliſhments, invented by the parties themſelves, who had long indulged a pique at each other, and took this opportunity of enjoying their revenge.

Theſe incidents, while they regaled their ſpleen, at the ſame time augmented the renown of the conjuror, who was deſcribed on both ſides as a very extraordinary perſon in his way; and the alteration in his door was no ſooner performed, than he had occaſion to avail himſelf of it, againſt the intruſion of a great many, with whom he would have found it very difficult to ſupport the fame he had acquired.

Among thoſe who appeared at his grate, he perceived a certain clergyman, whom he had long known an humble attendant on the great, and with ſome the reputed miniſter of their pleaſures; this Levite had diſguiſed himſelf in a great coat, boots, and dreſs quite foreign to the habit worn by thoſe of his function; and being admitted, attempted to impoſe himſelf as a country ſquire upon the conjuror, who calling him by his name, deſired him to ſit down. This reception correſponding with the report he had heard, touching our magician's art, the doctor ſaid he would lay aſide all diſſimulation. After having profeſſed an implicit belief, that his ſupernatural knowledge did not proceed from any communication with evil ſpirits, but was the immediate gift of Heaven, he declared the intention of his coming was to enquire into the health of a good friend and brother of his, who poſſeſſed a certain living in the country, which he named; and, as he was old and infirm, to know what ſpace of time was allotted to him in this frail ſtate of mortality, that he might have the melancholy ſatisfaction of attending him in his laſt

moments,

moments, and aſſiſting him in his preparation for eternity.

The conjuror, who at once perceived the purport of this queſtion, after a ſolemn pauſe, during which he ſeemed abſorbed in contemplation, delivered this reſponſe to his conſulter: 'Though I foreſee ſome occurrences, I do not pretend to be omniſcient. I know not to what age that clergyman's life will extend; but ſo far I can penetrate into the womb of time, as to diſcern, that the incumbent will ſurvive his intended ſucceſſor.' This dreadful ſentence in a moment baniſhed the blood from the face of the appaled conſulter, who hearing his own doom pronounced, began to tremble in every joint; he lifted up his eyes in the agony of fear, and ſaying—'The will of God be done!' withdrew in ſilent deſpondence, his teeth chattering with terror and diſmay.

This client was ſucceeded by an old man about the age of ſeventy-five, who being reſolved to purchaſe a leaſe, deſired to be determined in the term of years by the necromancer's advice; obſerving, that as he had no children of his own body, and had no regard for his heirs at law, the purchaſe would be made with a view to his own convenience only; and therefore, conſidering his age, he himſelf heſitated in the period of the leaſe, between thirty and threeſcore years.

The conjuror, upon due deliberation, adviſed him to double the laſt ſpecified term, becauſe he diſtinguiſhed in his features ſomething portending extreme old age and ſecond childhood, and he ought to provide for that ſtate of incapacity, which otherwiſe would be attended with infinite miſery and affliction. The ſuperannuated wretch, thunder-ſtruck with this prediction, held up his hands, and in the firſt tranſports of his apprehenſion, exclaimed—'Lord have mercy upon me! I have not wherewithal to purchaſe ſuch a long leaſe, and I have long outlived all my friends; what then muſt become of me, ſinner that I am, one hundred and twenty years hence!' Cadwallader, (who enjoyed his terror)

under pretence of alleviating his concern, told him that what he had prognosticated did not deprive him of the means which he and every person had in their power, to curtail a life of misfortune; and the old gentleman went away, seemingly comforted with the assurance, that it would always be in his power to employ an halter for his own deliverance.

Soon after the retreat of this elder, the magician was visited by one of those worthies, known among the Romans by the appellation of *Heredipetes*, who had amassed a large fortune by a close attention to the immediate wants and weakness of raw unexperienced heirs. This honourable usurer had sold an annuity upon the life of a young spendthrift, being thereto induced by the affirmation of his physician, who had assured him his patient's constitution was so rotten, that he could not live one year to an end: he had, nevertheless, made shift to weather eighteen months, and now seemed more vigorous and healthy than he had ever been known; for he was supposed to have nourished an hereditary pox from his cradle. Alarmed at this alteration, the seller came to consult Cadwallader not only about the life of the annuitant, but also concerning the state of his health at the time of his purchasing the annuity, purposing to sue the physician for false intelligence, should the conjuror declare that the young man was sound, when the doctor pronounced him diseased. But this was a piece of satisfaction he did not obtain from the misanthrope; who, in order to punish his sordid disposition, gave him to understand, that the physician had told him the truth, and nothing but the truth; and that the young gentleman was in a fair way of attaining a comfortable old age. 'That is to say,' cried the client, in the impatience of his mortification at this answer, 'bating accidents; for, thank God, the annuitant does not lead the most regular life; besides, I am credibly informed he is cholerick and rash; so that he may be concerned in a duel: then there are such things as riots in the street, in which a

rake's skull may be casually cracked; he may be overturned in a coach, overset in the river, thrown from a vicious horse, overtaken by a cold, endangered by a surfeit; but what I place my chief confidence in, is an hearty pox, a distemper which hath been fatal to his whole family. Not but that the issue of all these things is uncertain; and expedients might be found which would more effectually answer the purpose. I know they have arts in India, by which a man can secure his own interest, in the salutation of a friendly shake by the hand; and I do not doubt that you who have lived in that country are master of the secret. To be sure, if you was inclined to communicate such a nostrum, there are abundance of people who would purchase it at a very high price.'

Cadwallader understood this insinuation, and was tempted to amuse him in such a manner as would tend to his disgrace and confusion; but, considering that the case was of too criminal a nature to be tampered with, he withstood his desire of punishing this rapacious cormorant any other way than by telling him, he would not impart the secret for his whole fortune ten times doubled; so that the usurer retired, very much dissatisfied with the issue of his consultation.

The next person who presented himself at this altar of intelligence, was an author, who recommended himself to a gratis advice, by observing that a prophet and poet were known by the same appellation among the ancients; and that, at this day, both the one and the other spoke by inspiration. The conjuror refused to own this affinity, which, he said, formerly subsisted, because both species of the *Vates* were the children of fiction; but as he himself did not fall under that predicament, he begged leave to disown all connection with the family of the poets; and the poor author would have been dismissed without his errand, though he offered to leave an ode as security for the magician's fee, to be paid from the profits of his first third night, had not Cadwallader's curiosity prompted him to know

the ſubject of this gentleman's enquiry. He therefore told him, that in conſideration of his genius, he would for once ſatisfy him without a fee; and deſired him to ſpecify the doubts in which he wiſhed to be reſolved.

The ſon of Parnaſſus, glad of this condeſcenſion, for which he thanked the necromancer, gave him to underſtand, that he had ſome time before preſented a play in manuſcript to a certain great man, at the head of taſte, who had not only read and approved of the performance, but alſo undertaken to introduce and ſupport it on the ſtage; that he (the author) was aſſured by this patron, that the play was already (in conſequence of his recommendation) accepted by one of the managers, who had faithfully promiſed to bring it to light; but that when he waited on this ſame manager, to know when he intended to put his production in rehearſal, the man declared he had never ſeen or heard of the piece. 'Now, Mr. Conjuror,' ſaid he, 'I want to know whether or not my play has been preſented, and if I have any ſort of chance of ſeeing it acted this winter.'

Cadwallader, who had, in his younger days, ſported among the theatrical muſes, began to loſe his temper at this queſtion, which recalled the remembrance of his own diſappointments; and diſpatched the author with an abrupt anſwer, importing that the affairs of the ſtage were altogether without the ſphere of his divination, being entirely regulated by the demons of diſſimulation, ignorance, and caprice.

It would be an endleſs taſk to recount every individual reſponſe which our magician delivered in the courſe of his conjuration. He was conſulted in all caſes of law, phyſick, and trade, over and above the ordinary ſubjects of marriage and fornication; his advice and aſſiſtance were ſolicited by ſharpers, who deſired to poſſeſs an infallible method of cheating unperceived; by fortune-hunters, who wanted to make prize of widows and heireſſes; by debauchees, who were diſpoſed to lie with other men's wives; by coxcombs,

combs, who longed for the death of their fathers; by wenches with child, who wished themselves rid of their burdens; by merchants, who had insured above value, and thirsted after the news of a wreck; by underwriters, who prayed for the gift of prescience, that they might venture money upon such ships only as should perform the voyage in safety; by Jews, who wanted to foresee the fluctuations of stock; by usurers, who advance money upon undecided causes; by clients, who were dubious of the honesty of their council: in short, all matters of uncertain issue were appealed to this tribunal; and, in point of calculation, De Moivre was utterly neglected.

CHAP. XII.

The Conjuror and his Associate execute a Plan of Vengeance against certain Infidels who pretend to despise their Art; and Peregrine atchieves an Adventure with a young Nobleman.

BY these means, the whole variety of characters undisguised, passed as it were in review before the confederates, who, by divers ingenious contrivances, punished the most flagrant offenders with as much severity as the nature of their plan would allow. At length, they projected a scheme for chastising a number of their own acquaintance, who had all along professed the utmost contempt for the talent of this conjuror, which they endeavoured to ridicule in all companies, where his surprising art was the subject of discourse; not that they had sense and discernment enough to perceive the absurdity of his pretensions, but affected a singularity of opinion, with a view of insulting the inferior understanding of those who were deceived by such an idle impostor.

Peregrine, indeed, for obvious reasons, had always espoused their judgment in this case, and joined them in reviling the publick character of his friend: but he knew how far the capacities of those virtuosi extended, and had frequently caught them in the fact of recounting their exploits against the conjuror, which were the

productions of their own invention only. On these considerations, his wrath was kindled against them, and he accordingly concerted measures with his coadjutor for overwhelming them with confusion and dismay.

In the first place, a report was spread by his emissaries, that the magician had undertaken to entertain their view with the appearance of any person whom his customers should desire to see, whether dead, or at the distance of a thousand leagues. This extraordinary proposal chancing to be the subject of conversation, in a place where most of those infidels were assembled, they talked of it in the usual style, and some of them swore the fellow ought to be pillored for his presumption.

Our hero, seizing this favourable opportunity, acquiesced in their remarks, and observed with great vehemence, that it would be a meritorious action to put the rascal to the proof, and then toss him in a blanket for non-performance. They were wonderfully pleased with this suggestion, and forthwith determined to try the experiment: though, as they understood the apparition would be produced to one only at a time, they could not immediately agree in the choice of the person who should stand the first brunt of the magician's skill. While each of them severally excused himself from this preference on various pretences, Peregrine readily undertook the post, expressing great confidence of the conjuror's incapacity to give him the least cause of apprehension.

This point being settled, they detached one of their number to Crabtree, in order to bespeak and adjust the hour and terms of the operation, which he insisted upon performing at his own apartment, where every thing was prepared for the occasion. At the appointed time, they went thither in a body, to the number of seven, in full expectation of detecting the impostor; and were received with such gloomy formality, as seemed to have an effect upon the countenances of some among them; though they were encouraged by the vivacity of

Pickle, who affected a double ſhare of petulance, for the more effectual accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

Cadwallader made no reply to the interrogations they uttered, in the levivy of their inſolence, at the firſt entrance, but ordered Hadgi to conduct them through the next room, that they might ſee there was no previous apparatus to affright their deputy with objects foreign to his undertaking. They found nothing but a couple of wax tapers burning on a table that ſtood with a chair by it, in the middle of the apartment, and returned to the audience-chamber, leaving Peregrine by himſelf, to encounter the phantom of that perſon, whom they ſhould (without his knowledge) deſire the magician to conjure up to his view.

All the doors being ſhut, and the company ſeated, a profound ſilence enſued, together with a face of dreadful expectation, encouraged by the blue flame of the candles, which were tipped with ſulphur for that purpoſe, and heightened by the diſmal ſound of a large bell, which Hadgi tolled in the anti-chamber. Cadwallader having thus practiſed upon their ignorance and fear, deſired them to name the perſon to be produced. After ſome whiſpers among themſelves, one of them took the pen, and writing the name of Commodore Trunnion upon a ſlip of paper, put it into the hands of the magician, who roſe from his ſeat, and opening the door of his cloſet, diſplayed to their view a ſkull, with thigh bones croſſed upon a table covered with black cloth.

This melancholy ſpectacle made a remarkable impreſſion upon the imaginations of the company, already prepoſſeſſed by the previous ceremony; and they began to ſurvey one another with looks of conſternation, while Cadwallader, ſhutting himſelf in the cloſet, that was contigous to the chamber in which his friend Peregrine was ſtationed, thruſt the label with his uncle's name through a ſmall chink in the partition, according to agreement, muttering all the time a ſort of

gibberiſh that encreaſed the panick of his audience; then returning to the chair, the knell was knolled again, and Pickle called aloud, 'Damn your mummery! why don't you diſpatch?'

This was a ſignal to Crabtree, who thus certified of his having received the paper, ſtood up and waved his wand in the figure of an S. The motion being thrice performed, their ears were all of a ſudden invaded by a terrible noiſe in the next room, accompanied with the voice of Peregrine, who exclaimed in a tone of horror and amazement—'Guard me, Heaven! my uncle Trunnion!' This ejaculation had ſuch an effect upon the hearers, that two of them ſwooned with fear, a third fell upon his knees and prayed aloud, while the other three, in a tranſport of diſmay and diſtraction, burſt open the door, and ruſhed into the haunted chamber, where they found the table and chair overturned, and Peregrine extended, (in all appearance) without ſenſe or motion, upon the floor.

They immediately began to chafe his temples; and the firſt ſymptom of his recovery, which they perceived, was an hollow groan; after which he pronounced theſe words: 'Merciful powers! if I live, I ſaw the commodore with his black patch, in the very cloaths he wore at my ſiſter's wedding.' This declaration compleated their aſtoniſhment and terror: they obſerved a wildneſs in his looks, which he ſeemed to bend on ſomething concealed from their view; and were infected by his appearance to ſuch a pitch of ſuperſtition, that it would have been an eaſy matter to perſuade them that the chair and table were apparitions of their forefathers. However, they conducted Peregrine into the council-chamber, where the conjuror and Hadgi were employed in miniſtering to thoſe who had fainted. The patients having received the uſe of their faculties, Cadwallader aſſuming a double portion of ſeverity in his aſpect, aſked if they were not aſhamed of their former incredulity, declaring, that he was ready to give them more convincing proofs of his art upon the ſpot,

and would immediately recal three generations of their progenitors from the dead, if they were diſpoſed to reliſh ſuch company. Then turning to one of them whoſe great-grandfather had been hanged—'Are you,' ſaid he, 'ambitious of ſeeing the firſt remarkable perſonage of your family? Say the word, and he ſhall appear.'

This youth who had been the moſt inſolent and obſtreperous of the whole ſociety, and was now depreſſed with the ſame proportion of fear, alarmed at the propoſal, aſſured the magician he had no curioſity of that ſort remaining; and that what he had already ſeen, would, he hoped, have a good effect upon his future life and converſation. Every one of theſe heroes made an acknowledgment and profeſſion of the ſame kind, ſome of which were attended with tears; and Hadgi having provided chairs for the whole company, they departed exceedingly creſt-fallen. Two of the number actually ſickened with the agitation they had undergone, while our hero and his aſſociate made themſelves merry with the ſucceſs of their enterprize.

But this ſcheme of fortune-telling did not engroſs his whole attention; he ſtill continued to maintain his appearance in the beau-monde; and as his expence far exceeded his income, ſtrove to contract intimacies with people of intereſt and power; he ſhewed himſelf regularly at court, paid his reſpects to them in all places of publick diverſion, and frequently entered into their parties either of pleaſure or cards. In the courſe of this cultivation, he happened one evening, at a certain chocolate-houſe, to overlook a match at picquet, in which he perceived a couple of ſharpers making a prey of a young nobleman, who had neither temper nor ſkill ſufficient to cope with ſuch antagoniſts.

Our hero being a profeſſed enemy to all knights of induſtry, could not bear to ſee them cheat in publick with ſuch inſolent audacity. Under pretence of communicating ſome buſineſs of importance, he begged the favour of ſpeaking to the young gentleman in another

corner

corner of the room, and in a friendly manner cautioned him against the arts of his opponents. This hot-headed representative, far from thinking or owning himself obliged to Pickle for his good counsel, looked upon his advice as an insult upon his understanding; and replied with an air of ferocious displeasure, that he knew how to take care of his own concerns, and would not suffer either him or them to bubble him out of one shilling.

Peregrine, offended at the association, as well as at the ingratitude and folly of this conceited coxcomb, expressed his resentment, by telling him, that he expected at least an acknowledgment for his candid intention; but he found his intellects too much warped by his vanity, to perceive his own want of capacity and experience. Inflamed by this reproof, the young nobleman challenged him to play for five hundred pounds, with many opprobrious, or at least contemptuous terms of defiance, which provoked our hero to accept the proposal. After the other had disengaged himself from the old rooks, who were extremely mortified at the interruption, the two young champions sat down, and Fortune acting with uncommon impartiality, Pickle, by the superiority of his talents, in two hours won to the amount of as many thousand pounds, for which he was obliged to take his antagonist's note, the sharpers having previously secured his ready-money.

Frantick with his loss, the rash young man would have continued the game, and doubled stakes every time; so that Peregrine might have encreased his acquisition to ten times the sum he had gained; but he thought he had already sufficiently chastised the presumption of the challenger, and was unwilling to empower Fortune to ravish from him the fruits of his success; he therefore declined my lord's proposal, unless he would play for ready money; and his lordship having in vain tried his credit among the company, our adventurer withdrew, leaving him in an extasy of rage and disappointment.

As

As the insolence of his behaviour had increased with his ill-luck, and he had given vent to divers expressions, which Peregrine took amiss, our young gentleman resolved to augment his punishment, by teazing him with demands which could not, he knew, be immediately satisfied; and the next day sent Pipes to his father's house with the note, which was drawn payable upon demand. The debtor, who had gone to bed half distracted with his misfortune, finding himself waked with such a disagreeable dunn, lost all patience, cursed Pickle, threatened his messenger, blasphemed with horrible execrations, and made such a noise, as reached the ears of his father; who ordering his son to be called into his presence, examined him about the cause of that uproar which had disturbed the whole family. The young gentleman after having essayed to amuse him with sundry equivocations, which served only to increase his suspicion and desire of knowing the truth, acknowledged that he had lost some money over night at cards, to a gamester, who had been so impertinent as to send a message, demanding it that morning, though he had told the fellow, that it would not suit him to pay it immediately. The father, who was a man of honour, reproached him with great severity for his profligate behaviour in general, and this scandalous debt in particular, which he believed to be some trifle; then giving him a bank note for five hundred pounds, commanded him to go and discharge it without loss of time. This well-principled heir took the money, but instead of waiting upon his creditor, he forthwith repaired to the gaming-house in hopes of retrieving his loss; and before he rose from the table, saw his note mortgaged for seven eighths of it's value.

Meanwhile, Pickle, incensed at the treatment which his servant had received, and informed of his lordship's second loss, which aggravated his resentment, determined to preserve no medium, and taking out a writ the same day, put it immediately in execution upon the

the body of his debtor, juſt as he ſtepped into his chair at the door of White's Chocolate-houſe. The priſoner being naturally fierce and haughty, attempted to draw upon the bailiffs, who diſarmed him in a twinkling; and this effort ſerved only to heighten his diſgrace, which was witneſſed by a thouſand people, moſt of whom laughed very heartily at the adventure of a lord's being arreſted.

Such a publick tranſaction could not long eſcape the knowledge of his father, who, that very day, had the ſatisfaction to hear that his ſon was in a ſpunging-houſe. In conſequence of this information, he ſent his ſteward to learn the particulars of the arreſt, and was equally offended, ſurprized, and concerned, when he underſtood the nature of the debt, which he imagined his ſon had already diſcharged. Unwilling to pay ſuch a conſiderable ſum for a ſpendthrift, whom he had but too much indulged, and who in leſs than one week might involve himſelf in ſuch another difficulty, the old gentleman wrote a letter to Peregrine, repreſenting what a hardſhip it would be upon him to forfeit ſuch ſums by the indiſcretion of a ſon, whoſe engagements he was not bound to fulfil, and deſiring ſome mitigation in his demands, as it was not a debt contracted for value received, but incurred without ſubjecting him to the leaſt damage or inconvenience.

Our adventurer no ſooner received this letter, than he went in perſon to wait upon the author, to whom he, in a candid manner, related the particular circumſtances of the match, together with the ingratitude and audacity of his ſon, which he owned had ſtimulated him to ſuch meaſures as he otherwiſe would have ſcorned to take. The nobleman acknowledged the revenge was hardly adequate to the provocation, and condemned the conduct of his ſon with ſuch juſtice and integrity, as diſarmed Peregrine of his reſentment, and diſpoſed him to give him an undoubted proof of his own diſintereſtedneſs, which he immediately exhibited, by producing the note, and tearing it to pieces, after

having

having assured his lordship that the writ should be withdrawn, and the prisoner discharged before night.

The earl, who perfectly well understood the value of money, and was no stranger to the character of mankind, stood amazed at this sacrifice, which Pickle protested was offered by his esteem for his lordship: and after having complimented him upon his generosity, in a very uncommon strain of encomium, begged the favour of his acquaintance, and insisted upon his dining with him next day. The youth, proud of having met with such an opportunity to distinguish himself, in less than an hour performed every article of his promise; and in the morning was visited by the debtor, who came by the express order of his father, to thank him for the obligation under which he was laid, and to ask pardon for the offence he had given.

This condescention was very glorious for our hero, who graciously received his submission, and accompanied him to dinner, when he was caressed by the old earl with marks of particular affection and esteem. Nor was his gratitude confined to exterior civility; he offered him the use of his interest at court, which was very powerful, and repeated his desire of serving him so pressingly, that Peregrine thought he could not dispense with the opportunity of assisting his absent friend Godfrey, in whose behalf he begged the influence of his lordship.

The earl, pleased with this request, which was another proof of the young gentleman's benevolence, said, he would not fail to pay the utmost regard to his recommendation; and in six weeks a captain's commission was actually signed for the brother of Emilia, who was very agreeably surprized at the intimation he received from the war-office, though he was utterly ignorant of the canal through which he obtained that promotion.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Peregrine is celebrated as a Wit and Patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the Expence of whom it did concern.

IN the mean time, Peregrine flouriſhed in the gay ſcenes of life, and (as I have already obſerved) had divers opportunities of profiting in the way of marriage, had not his ambition been a little too inordinate, and his heart ſtill biaſſed by a paſſion, which all the levity of youth could not balance, nor all the pride of vanity overcome. Nor was our hero unmarked in the world of letters and taſte: he had ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral poetical productions, by which he had acquired a good ſhare of reputation; not that the pieces were ſuch as ought to have done much honour to his genius; but any tolerable performance from a perſon of his figure, and ſuppoſed fortune, will always be conſidered by the bulk of readers as an inſtance of aſtoniſhing capacity: though the very ſame production, uſhered into the world with the name of an author in leſs affluent circumſtances, would be juſtly diſregarded and deſpiſed: ſo much is the opinion of moſt people influenced and overawed by ridiculous conſiderations.

Be this as it will, our young gentleman was no ſooner diſtinguiſhed as an author, than he was marked out as a patron by all the ſtarving retainers to poetry; he was ſolemnized in odes, celebrated in epigrams, and fed with the milk of ſoft dedication. His vanity even reliſhed this incenſe: and though his reaſon could not help deſpiſing thoſe that offered it, not one of them was ſent away unowned by his munificence. He began to think himſelf, in good earneſt, that ſuperior genius which their flattery had deſcribed; he cultivated acquaintance with the wits of faſhion, and even compoſed in ſecret a number of bon mots, which he uttered in company as the impromptus of his imagination. In this practice, indeed, he imitated ſome of the moſt renowned geniuſes of the age, who (if the truth were known)

known) have laboured in secret, with the sweat of their brows, for many a repartee which they have vended as the immediate production of fancy and expression. He was so successful in this exercise of his talents, that his fame actually came in competition with that great man, who had long sat at the helm of wit: and in a dialogue that once happened between them, on the subject of a cork-screw, wherein the altercation was discharged (according to Bayes) flap for flap, dash for dash, our hero was judged to have the better of his lordship, by some of the minor satellites that commonly surround and reflect the rays of such mighty luminaries.

In a word, he dipped himself so far in these literary amusements, that he took the management of the pit into his direction, putting himself at the head of those criticks who call themselves the town; and in that capacity chastised several players who had been rendered insolent and refractory by unmerited success. As for the new productions of the stage, though generally unspirited and insipid, they always enjoyed the benefit of his influence and protection; because he never disliked the performance so much as he sympathized with the poor author, who stood behind the scenes in the most dreadful suspense, trembling, as it were, on the very brink of damnation: yet, though he extended his generosity and compassion to the humble and needy, he never let slip one opportunity of mortifying villainy and arrogance. Had the executive power of the legislature been vested in him, he would have doubtless devised a strange species of punishment for all offenders against humanity and decorum; but, restricted as he was, he employed his invention in subjecting them to the ridicule and contempt of their fellow-subjects.

It was with this view he set on foot the scheme of conjuration, which was still happily carried on, and made use of the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader; though he sometimes converted this advantage to the purposes of gallantry, being (as the reader may have perceived) of a very amorous complexion. He not only

acted the reformer, or rather the castigator, in the fashionable world, but also exercised his talents among the inferior class of people, who chanced to incur his displeasure.

One mischievous plan that entered our hero's imagination, was suggested by two advertisements published in the same paper, by persons who wanted to borrow certain sums of money, for which they promised to give undeniable security. Peregrine, from the style and manner of both, concluded they were written by attornies, a species of people for whom he entertained his uncle's aversion. In order to amuse himself, and some of his friends, with their disappointment, he wrote a letter signed A. B. to each advertiser, according to the address specified in the newspaper, importing, that if he would come with his writings to a certain coffee-house near the Temple, precisely at six o'clock in the evening, he would find a person sitting in the right hand box next the window, who would be glad to treat with him about the subject of his advertisement, and, should his security be liked, would accommodate him with the sum which he wanted to raise. Before the hour of this double appointment, Pickle, with his friend Cadwallader, and a few more gentlemen, to whom he had thought proper to communicate the plan, went to the coffee-house, and seated themselves near the place that was destined for their meeting.

The hope of getting money had such an evident effect upon their punctuality, that one of them arrived a considerable time before the hour; and having reconnoitered the room, took his station according to the direction he had received, fixing his eyes upon a clock that stood before him, and asking of the bar-keeper if it was not too slow. He had not remained in this posture many minutes, when he was joined by a strange figure, that waddled into the room with a bundle of papers in his bosom, and the sweat running over his nose. Seeing a man in the box to which he had been directed, he took it for granted he was the lender; and as soon

as he could recover his breath, which was almost exhausted by the dispatch he had made—'Sir,' said he, 'I presume you are the gentleman I was to meet about that loan.' Here he was interrupted by the other, who eagerly replied—'A B. Sir, I suppose.'—'The same,' cried the last comer; 'I was afraid I should be too late; for I was detained beyond my expectation, by a nobleman in the other end of the town that wants to mortgage a small trifle of his estate, about a thousand a year; and my watch happens to be in the hands of the maker, having met with an accident a few nights ago, which set it asleep. But howsomever, there's no time lost, and I hope this affair will be transacted to the satisfaction of us both. For my own part, I love to do good offices myself, and therefore I expect nothing but what is fair and honest of other people.'

His new friend was exceedingly comforted by this declaration, which he considered as a happy omen of his success; and the hope of fingering the cash operated visibly in his countenance, while he expressed his satisfaction at meeting with a person of such candour and humanity. 'The pleasure,' said he, 'of dealing with an easy conscientious man, is, in my opinion, superior to that of touching all the money upon earth; for what joy can be compared with what a generous mind feels in befriending its fellow-creatures? I was never so happy in my life, as at one time in lending five hundred pounds to a worthy gentleman in distress, without insisting upon rigid security. Sir, one may easily distinguish an upright man by his countenance; for example now, I think I could take your word for ten thousand pounds.' The other with great joy protested, that he was right in his conjecture, and returned the compliment a thousand fold; by which means the expectation of both was wound up to a very interesting pitch; and both at the same instant began to produce their papers, in the untying of which their hands shook with transports of eagerness and impatience, while their

eyes were ſo intent upon their work, that they did not perceive the occupation of each other.

At length, one of them, having got the ſtart of the other, and unrolled ſeveral ſkins of muſty parchment, directed his view to the employment of his friend; and ſeeing him fumbling at his bundle, aſked if that was a blank bond and conveyance which he had brought along with him. The other, without lifting up his eyes, or deſiſting from his endeavours to looſe the knot, which by this time he had applied to his teeth, anſwered his queſtion in the negative, obſerving, that the papers in his hand were the ſecurity which he propoſed to give for the money.

This reply converted the looks of the enquirer into a ſtare of infinite ſtolidity, accompanied with the word, 'Anan!' which he pronounced in a tone of fear and aſtoniſhment. The other, alarmed at this note, caſt his eyes towards the ſuppoſed lender, and was in a moment infected by his aſpect. All the exultation of hope that ſparkled in their eyes was now ſucceeded by diſappointment and diſmay; and while they gazed ruefully at each other, their features were gradually elongated, like the tranſient curls of a Middle-row periwig.

This emphatick ſilence was, however, broke by the laſt comer, who, in a faultering accent, deſired the other to recollect the contents of his letter. 'Of your letter!' cried the firſt, putting into his hand the advertiſement he had received from Pickle; which he had no ſooner peruſed, than he produced his own for the ſatisfaction of the other party: ſo that another gloomy pauſe enſued, at the end of which each uttered a profound ſigh, or rather groan, and riſing up, ſneaked off without farther communication; he who ſeemed to be the moſt afflicted of the two, taking his departure with an exclamation of—'Humbugged, egad!'

Such were the amuſements of our hero, though they did not engroſs his whole time, ſome part of which was dedicated to nocturnal riots and revels, among a ſet of young noblemen, who had denounced war againſt temperance,

temperance, œconomy, and common ſenſe, and were, indeed, the devoted ſons of tumult, waſte, and prodigality. Not that Peregrine reliſhed thoſe ſcenes, which were a ſucceſsion of abſurd extravagance, devoid of all true ſpirit, taſte, and enjoyment: but his vanity prompted him to mingle with thoſe who were intitled the choice ſpirits of the age; and his diſpoſition was ſo pliable, as to adapt itſelf eaſily to the meaſures of his company, where he had not influence enough to act in the capacity of director. Their rendezvous was at a certain tavern, which might be properly ſtyled the temple of exceſs, where they left the choice of their fare to the diſcretion of their landlord, that they might ſave themſelves the pains of exerciſing their own reaſon; and in order to avoid the trouble of adjuſting the bill, ordered the waiter to declare how much every individual muſt pay, without ſpecifying the articles of the charge. This proportion generally amounted to two guineas per head for each dinner and ſupper, and frequently exceeded that ſum; of which the landlord durſt not abate, without running the riſk of having his noſe ſlit for his moderation.

But this was a puny expence, compared with that which they often incurred by the damage done to the furniture and ſervants, in the madneſs of their intoxication, as well as the loſs they ſuſtained at hazard, an amuſement to which all of them had recourſe in the progreſs of their debauches. This elegant diverſion was introduced, encouraged, and promoted, by a crew of rapacious ſharpers, who had made themſelves neceſſary companions to this hopeful generation, by the talent of pimping and buffoonery. Though they were univerſally known, even by thoſe they preyed upon, to have no other means of earning their livelihood, than the moſt infamous and fraudulent practices, they were careſſed and courted by theſe infatuated dupes, when a man of honour, who would not join in their exceſſes, would have been treated with the utmoſt indignity and contempt.

Though Peregrine, in his heart, deteſted thoſe abandoned courſes, and was a profeſſed enemy to the whole ſociety of gameſters, whom he conſidered and always treated as the foes of human kind, he was inſenſibly accuſtomed to licentious riot, and even led imperceptibly into play by thoſe cormorants, who are no leſs dangerous in the art of cheating, than by their conſummate ſkill in working upon the paſſions of unwary youth. They are, for the moſt part, naturally cool, phlegmatick, and crafty, and by a long habit of diſſimulation have gained an abſolute dominion over the haſty paſſions of the heart, ſo that they engage with manifeſt advantage over the impatience and impetuoſity of a warm, undeſigning temper, like that of our young gentleman, who, when he was heated with wine, miſled by example, invited on one hand, and defied on the other, forgot all his maxims of caution and ſobriety, and plunging into the reigning folly of the place, had frequent occaſions to moralize in the morning upon the loſs of the preceding night.

Theſe penitential reflections were attended with many laudable reſolutions of profiting by the experience which he had ſo dearly purchaſed; but he was one of thoſe philoſophers, who always put off, till another day, the commencement of their reformation.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL